



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

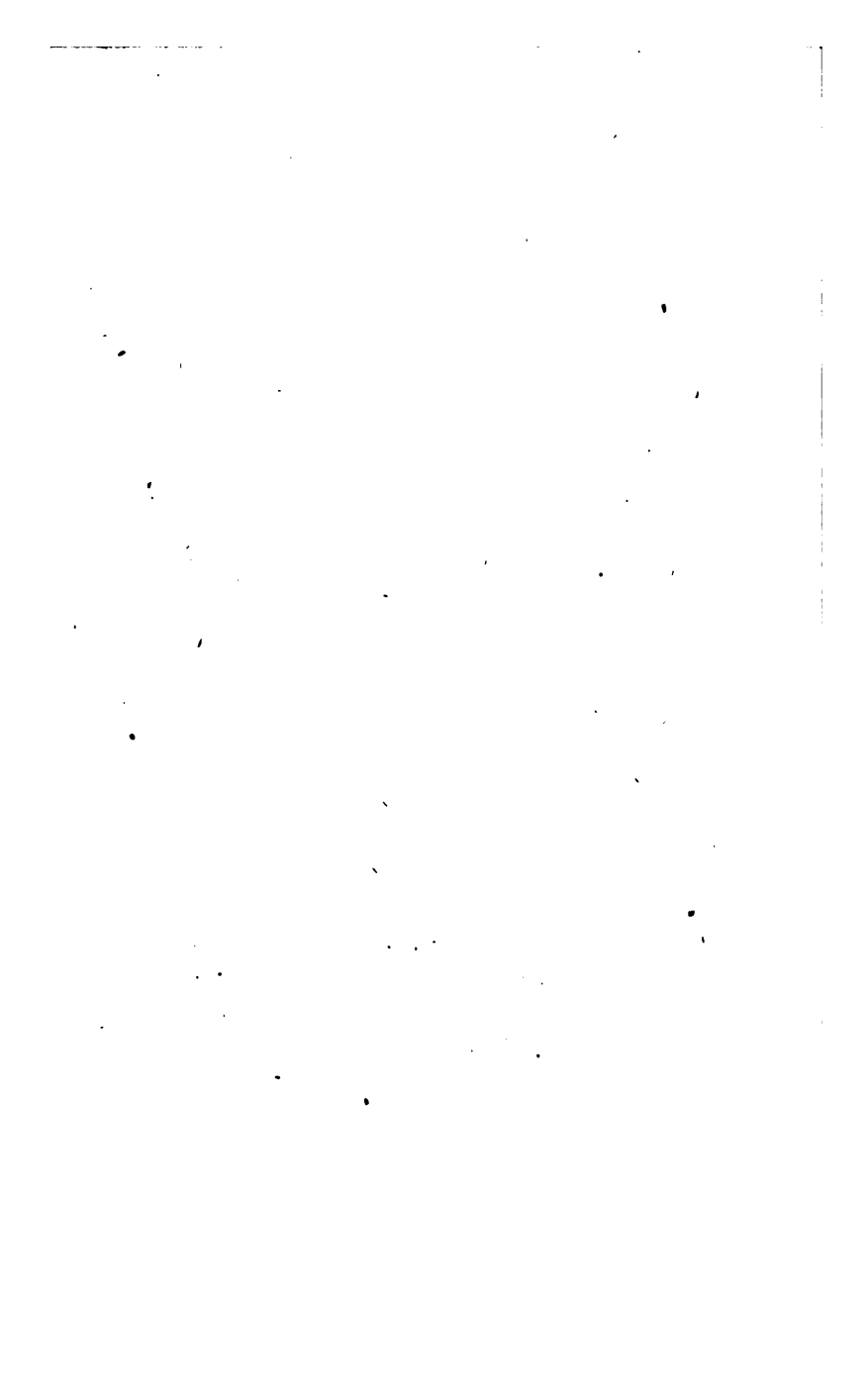
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

48.859.







A
FRENCH GRAMMAR,

ARRANGED ON

A New and Systematic Plan,

CONTAINING

A SYNOPTICAL TABLE

OF THE CONJUGATION OF EVERY REGULAR VERB;

AN ALPHABETICAL LIST

OF ALL THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN THE LANGUAGE;

AND

THE GENDERS SIMPLIFIED BY A NEW METHOD.

BY B. DU GUÉ,

Author of "A French Pronouncing Dictionary;" "French Exercises,"
"French Conversations," &c.

FOURTH EDITION, ENLARGED AND IMPROVED.



DUBLIN:

JOHN ROBERTSON, 3, GRAFTON STREET.

SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, AND CO., LONDON.

1848.

ENTERED AT STATIONERS' HALL.

T. I. White, Printer, 45, Fleet Street, Dublin.

PREFACE.

IN my Preface to the *First* edition of this Grammar, I expressed myself as follows: “The French language is
“now so generally studied, and constitutes so essential a
“part of a liberal education, that it is perhaps unnecessary
“to allude to the advantages to be derived from an intimate acquaintance with it:—it is more incumbent on me,
“at present, to state what has been my object in preparing the following pages, which I now present to the
“attention of the literary public. In them I have attempted
“to simplify, condense, and arrange useful grammatical
“information. Therefore, not only have the Rules and
“Exceptions been laid down with perspicuity, but likewise
“throughout the treatise I have studied conciseness and
“order; for the convenience of the junior student in
“the French Language who requires not merely that
“the rules should be stated so explicitly that he may
“understand them, but likewise that due regard should
“be paid to brevity and arrangement, that he may remember them. As an accurate acquaintance with the
“formation of the Tenses of the verbs is of the greatest
“importance, particular attention has been paid to this
“subject, and to afford every facility to the young pupil,
“I have subjoined the conjugations of all the verbs in the
“French Language.”

In those terms the original edition was introduced to the notice of teachers and students. With regard to the *present* I would observe, that it has undergone a most rigid and

careful revision. MUCH IMPORTANT MATTER HAS BEEN ADDED: THE DEFINITIONS ARE EXPRESSED WITH GREATER SIMPLICITY THAN IN THE PRECEDING EDITIONS; AND WITH A VIEW TO A MORE PERFECT ILLUSTRATION OF THE RULES, A NUMBER OF EXAMPLES HAS BEEN INTRODUCED; BESIDES, ALL THE EXCEPTIONS ARE ANNEXED TO EACH RULE: so that the student cannot have the least difficulty, for if the word is not found among the exceptions it must be regular. The *verbs* (which require so much attention) have been conjugated in *all* their different forms, as it is essential that each should be known; all the *irregular* verbs in the language will be found in alphabetical order.

The lesson on *Genders* will shew with what ease a knowledge of them may be acquired by the sound of the last syllable, even if the student may not know the correct spelling of the word. In fact I have laboured most diligently to render this Grammar as perfect as it was in my power to make it; my aim throughout was *utility*, neither have I inserted *any rule* unless sanctioned by the most unquestionable authority.

During a period of nineteen years, the leisure hours—which a due attention to the proper discharge of the duties of an arduous and honorable profession would allow me—have been devoted to the subject which I have here attempted to elucidate, and the result of my labours is again respectfully submitted to the public.

B. DU GUÉ,

Professor of the French Language.

27, PEMBROKE PLACE,
DUBLIN.

CONTENTS.

	PAGES
A, à, a,	101, 125
ACCENTS and marks,	2, 3, 4
Accute,	2
Grave,	2
Circumflex,	3
Diæresis,	3
Cedilla,	3
Apostrophe,	4
ADJECTIVES,	46
Numeral,	57 to 62
Placed before the noun,	46
Placed after the noun,	47
Plural,	40
Masculine and Feminine,	53 to 56
Demonstrative,	65
Possessive,	63
Indefinite,	67
Comparison,	51
Used adverbially,	98
Used substantively,	44
ADVERBS,	91, 96, 97, 98
Place of Adverbs,	91
Formation of Adverbs,	94
Adverbial phrases,	24, 92
Principal Adverbs,	96, 97, 98

	PAGES
ALPHABETICAL LIST of Irregular Verbs, ...	167
Of the Adverbs, ...	96, 97, 98
Of the Prepositions, ...	102, 103
Of the Conjunctions, ...	105, 106
ARTICLES, ..	15 to 26
Le, La, L', Les, ...	15, 16, 17, 20
Un, une, des, ...	17, 18
Du, de la, de l', des, ...	18, 19
Avoir,	125
 Cases,	 13, 14
Cent and Vingt,	58
Consonants,	10, 11
Conjunction governing subjunctive,	106
Compound Nouns,	42, 43
Vowels,	9
 Diphthongs,	 2
Diæresis,	2
De,	21, 22, 24, 25, 26, 101
Dans,	102
Demi and nu,	48
 En,	 24, 87, 100, 102
Etre,	130
 FORMATION of Adverbs,	 94
of the Plural in Substantives,	40 to 45
,, ,, Adjectives,	40 to 45
of Feminine in Adjectives,	53
Feu and feue,	49
 GENDERS of Nouns,	 28 to 39
General View of Genders,	33
Irregular Verbs,	167
 Interjections,	 107, 108

CONTENTS.

vii

	PAGES
Marks, ...	3, 4
Mil, mille,	62
Nasal sounds,	9, 10
Number,	13
Nu and demi,	48
On and l' on,	86
Orthographical Signs,	209
Part of speech,	12, 13
PREPOSITIONS,	99
à, de, pour, dans, and en,	100, 101
List of Prepositions,	102, 103
Past Participle,	119
Present Participle,	118
PRONOUNS,	71, 91
Demonstrative,	79, 80
Interrogative,	84
Indefinite,	86, 88
Personal,	72 to 76
Possessive,	77, 78
Relative,	81 to 83
Governed by the Verb,	123, 124
Punctuation,	209
SUBSTANTIVES or Nouns,	26
Proper Nouns,	27
Common „	27
Collective „	27
Genders of the Nouns,	28 to 39
Plural „ „	40 to 45
Nouns having no singular,	45
„ „ plural,	44
Latin Nouns,	44
Tout, toute, tous, toutes,	20

	PAGES
VERB,	109
Auxiliary,	109, 125, 130
Active,	109
Passive,	110
Neuter,	111
Reflective,	112
Reciprocal,	112
Persons and Number,	113
Moods,	113, 115
Tenses,	115, 117
Present Participle,	118
Past Participle,	119
VERBS CONJUGATED.	
Affirmatively,	121
Negatively,	121, 129, 134, 149, 158
Interrogatively,	122, 133, 161
Negatively and Interrogatively,	123, 135, 153, 162
Pronouns governed by the verb,	123
Impersonal verbs,	124
Reflective verbs,	124, 155
Passive verbs,	162
Irregular verbs,	167
1st Conjugation,	136
2nd ,,	140
3rd ,,	143
4th ,,	146
Y, ,,	87
VINGT and cent,	58

FRENCH GRAMMAR.

FIRST LESSON.

GRAMMAR is the science which teaches us how to speak and write correctly, according to the rules, customs, and idioms of a language.

In order to express our ideas, we make use of words written or articulated. For example, when we say *L'homme est pécheur*, (man is a sinner,) we express a thought by four signs or words.

WORDS are composed of letters, which, alone, or joined with other letters, form syllables.

1. A SYLLABLE is a distinct sound, consisting either of one letter ; as, *a* ; or of two or more letters pronounced at once ; as, *moi*, (I), *toi*, (thou).

Words of one syllable ; as, *le*, (the), *me*, (me), are styled *monosyllables* ; of two, as *pouvoir*, (power), *dissyllables* ; of three, as *vérité*, (truth), *trisyllables* ; and of four or more, as *abondamment*, (abundantly), *polysyllables*.

2. A **DIPHTHONG** is the union of vowels, heard distinctly by the same impulse of the voice; as in *pieu*, (stake), *cieux*, (heaven); though not words of two syllables, yet the *i* and *eu* are plainly heard. Ex.

<i>i-é</i>	in	<i>piége</i>	<i>u-i</i>	in	<i>lui</i>
<i>i-è</i>	„	<i>lumière</i>	<i>i-en*</i>	„	<i>bien</i>
<i>i-ai</i>	„	<i>biais</i>	<i>i-an</i>	„	<i>viande</i>
<i>i-o</i>	„	<i>pioche</i>	<i>i-on</i>	„	<i>occasion</i>

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

What have you remarked in this lesson?—It is the same as in English, but there is nothing said of improper diphthongs or triphthongs. Because the French language has none; *au*, *eau*, *ai*, *aient*, are styled compound vowels, and they produce only one sound. Example:

Aumone, pr. *o-mo-ne*; *château*, pr. *shâ-tô*; *aimai*, pr. *é-mé*; *aimaient*, pr. *é-mé*.

A triphthong would be a syllable which would make three sounds heard in the same impulse of the voice: this does not exist in the French language.

SECOND LESSON.

ON ACCENTS, MARKS, AND ORTHOGRAPHICAL SIGNS.†

ACCENTS are signs or small marks, which are placed over the vowels, either to show their pronunciation, or to distinguish words similarly spelled.

There are three accents—the acute, the grave, and the circumflex.

3. (´) The acute is placed only over the letter *e*, to mark a sharp sound; as in *bonté*, (goodness.)
4. (`) The grave is placed over the letter *e*, to give a

* *En* at the end of a word is pronounced *in*; as, *bien*, pron. *bi-in*.

† See, at the end of the Grammar, the lesson on Orthographical Signs.

long sound; as in *procès*, (lawsuit); and also to distinguish different parts of speech; as

<i>à</i>	to	from	<i>a</i>	has
<i>dès</i>	from	...	<i>des</i>	of the
<i>là</i>	there	...	<i>la</i>	the
<i>où</i>	where	...	<i>ou</i>	or

5. (^) The circumflex is placed over *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*, to denote a long sound, as in *château*,* (castle); and also to distinguish certain words, having the same form, but different significations; as,

<i>dâ</i> ,	owed,	from	<i>du</i> ,	of the
<i>crâ</i> ,	grown,	...	<i>cru</i> ,	believed
<i>mûr</i> ,	ripe,	...	<i>mur</i> ,	wall
<i>sûr</i> ,	certain,	...	<i>sur</i> ,	upon
<i>tâ</i> ,	concealed,	...	<i>tu</i> ,	thou
<i>tâche</i> ,	task,	...	<i>tache</i> ,	spot
<i>vôler</i> ,	to fly,	...	<i>voler</i> ,	to steal

There are three marks†—the diæresis, the cedilla, and the apostrophe.

6. (¨)‡ The diæresis is placed over the vowels *e*, *i*, *u*, to show that they must be pronounced separately; as,

<i>Noël</i> ,	Christmas,	pronounced	<i>No-ël</i>
<i>hâir</i> ,	to hate,	...	<i>a-ir</i>
<i>Esau</i> ,	Esau,	...	<i>Eza-u</i>

7. (ç) The cedilla is placed under the letter *c*, before

* The circumflex generally shows that an *s* has been omitted, as *château* was formerly spelled *chasteau*. It sometimes shows also that an *a*, *e*, or *o* is omitted, as *gaiment* was spelled *gaiement*; and in poetry, the *e* in *paierai* is sometimes omitted, and is spelled *païrai*, (I will pay.) Also, *âge* and *rôle* were formerly spelled *aage* and *roole*, &c.

† See, at the end of the Grammar, the lesson on Orthographical Signs.

‡ The diæresis is always placed on the second vowel.

a, o, u, to show that the *c* must be pronounced like *s*; as,

<i>façade</i> ,	the front of a building,	pronounced	<i>fa-sa-de</i>
<i>leçon</i> ,	lesson,	...	<i>le-son</i>
<i>reçu</i> ,	received,	...	<i>re-su</i>

8. (') The apostrophe shows the suppression of the final vowels (*a, e, i*;) in certain words, when the next word begins with a vowel or *h* mute, to prevent the unpleasant sound of two vowels meeting; as,

<i>l'ame</i>	the soul,	instead of	<i>la ame</i>
<i>l'ami</i>	the friend,	...	<i>le ami</i>
<i>s'il faut</i>	if it be necessary,	...	<i>si il faut</i>
<i>l'homme</i>	the man,	...	<i>le homme</i>

RULES

WHEN TO OMIT THE FINAL VOWEL AND TO SUBSTITUTE THE APOSTROPHE.

9. The vowel is always omitted in the following words,

ce, de,* je, le,* me, ne, que,* se,* and *te*,

when the next word begins with a vowel or *h* mute.

10. *La.** The *a* is omitted only in the article and personal pronoun; as, *l'ame*, (the soul); *P'église*, (the church); *je l'entends*, (I hear him).

- 11.—*Observe.* However, after an imperative the vowel is not omitted before another vowel in the pronouns, *la, le*, and *là* adverb; as *Envoyez-la à Dublin*, send him to Dublin; *Envoyez-le à Londres*, send him to London; *Viendra-t-il là avec moi?* shall he come there with me?

*12.—The VOWEL is NEVER OMITTED before *un, unième, onze, onzième*, and *oui*; as, *le un, le unième, le onze, le onzième, le oui, que oui, entre onze heures et midi*.

13. *Entre*. The *e* is omitted only before the reciprocal verbs beginning with a vowel; *s'entr'aimer*, (to love one another); *s'entr'aider*, (to help one another); and in the compound word, *entr'acte*, (interlude), &c. You may or you may not omit the *e* before *elle*, *elles*, *eux*, and *autres*; as, *entre elle*, or *entr'elle*, &c.
14. *Jusque*. The *e* is omitted only before *à*, *au*, *aux*, *à la*, *à l'*, *ici*, and *où*.
15. *Moi* and *Toi*. *Oi* is omitted only after an imperative before *en*; as, *apportez-m' en*, (bring me some); *va-t' en*, (go thou away.)
16. *Presque*. The *e* is omitted only before *île*, (an island).
17. *Puisque*, } The *e* is omitted only before *il*, *ils*, *elle*,
and } *elles*, *un*, *une*, *ainsi*, and *on*.
18. *Quoique*. }
- 19.—*Observe*. In *puisque* and *quoique*, before *aider*, *un peu*, *étranger*, you may or you may not omit the vowel; as, *puisque'aider*, or *puisque aider*; *quoiqu'étranger*, or *quoique étranger*, &c.
20. *Quelque*. The *e* is omitted only before *il*, *ils*, *elle*, *elles*, *un*, and *une*.
21. *Si*. The *i* is omitted only before *il* and *ils*.
22. *Grande*. The *e* is omitted in the adjective *grande*, before a substantive feminine beginning with a consonant, and an apostrophe placed instead of it; as,
- | | | |
|-----------------------|---------------------|---------------------|
| <i>grand'mère,</i> | <i>grand'tante,</i> | <i>grand'messe,</i> |
| <i>grand'chambre,</i> | <i>grand'salle,</i> | <i>grand'mode,</i> |
| <i>grand'chère,</i> | <i>grand'chose,</i> | <i>grand'merci,</i> |
| <i>grand'reine,</i> | <i>grand'faim,</i> | <i>grand'soif,</i> |
| <i>grand'peine,</i> | <i>grand'pitié,</i> | <i>grand'peur.</i> |

But if these words are preceded by *très*, *une*, *fort*, or

la plus, you must not omit the *e* of *grande* ; as, *j'ai une grande maison, la plus grande faim, &c.*

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

Do you always omit a final vowel, when the next word begins with a vowel?—No. How do you know when to do so?—In the 4th and 5th pages of this work we have all the rules when it ought to be omitted. What do you remark in the 12th rule?—The vowel is never omitted before *un* (one), *unième* (first), *onze* (eleven), *onzième* (eleventh), and *oui* (yes.)

THIRD LESSON.

ON LETTERS.

The elements of a language are represented by characters, called letters ; they are twenty-five in number, which constitute the French alphabet : thus,

a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, j, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s,
t, u, v,* x, y, z.†

Letters are divided into Vowels and Consonants.

ON VOWELS.

A vowel has a perfect sound, without the aid of any other letter.

* There is no *w* in the French language. When we use it, (in words not belonging to the French) as in *Waterloo, Warwick*, we pronounce it like a single *v* ; as, *Vaterlo, Varvick, &c.*

† For the pronunciation of every letter, and their exceptions, see Du Gué's "Key to the French Pronunciation," where the most accurate rules are given for pronouncing every word in the language.

They are six in number—*a, e, i, o, u, and y.**

They are classified into—*guttural, lingual, and labial.*

The *gutturals* are *a, † e, ‡* so called because pronounced from the throat.

The *linguals* are *é, i;* so called because pronounced with the tongue. For the pronunciation of *é* and *è*, see No. 24 & 25.

The *labials* are, *o, u;* so called because pronounced with the lips. For pronunciation of *o, u*, see No. 27 and 28.

The vowels are long or short.

HOW TO DISTINGUISH THEM.

Long vowels are generally marked by a circumflex (ˆ), or a grave accent (˘). Short vowels have no accent.

â	§	is long in	pâte,	paste,	and short in	pate,	paw
ê	...	tête,	head,	...	ville,	town	
è	...	accès,	access,	...	le,	the	
î	...	vite,	quickly,	...	visite,	visit	
ô	...	apôtre,	apostle,	...	dévôte,	pious	
û	...	flûte,	flute,	...	dispute,	dispute	

* Many grammarians consider the *y* (*i grec*) not a vowel; others do. The French Academy receive only five. Why not consider it a vowel, as it is pronounced like an *i*; as, *style, yeux*, pronounced *stîle, i-eux*. After a vowel it is sounded like double *i*; as, *pays voyager*, pronounced *pai-i voi-ia-jé*.

† A short *e* is pronounced like *a* in the English word *hat*.

‡ E short is pronounced like *e* in the English word *the*, followed by a consonant; as, *the man*.

§ The *a*, though not marked by a circumflex, is long in *pas*, pronounced *pâ*. Long *â* is pronounced like *a* in the English word *far*.

|| *Pate* is also spelled with double *t*.—See Gattel's Dictionary.

There are also three kinds of *e*; the short, the sharp, and the grave.

23. Short *e** has no accent whatever, and is pronounced like *e* in the English word *the*, followed by a consonant: as, *the man*. For example:

pomme*	apple,	pronounced	po-me.*
ville*	city,	...	vi-le.*

24. *E* is sharp only when marked with an acute accent ('), or followed by *r* or *x*, in words ending in *ez*, *ger*, *ier*,† *cher*,‡ and in the present infinitive of verbs of the first conjugation; the final *r* or *x* not to be pronounced, and sounds as *ey* in the English word *they*. For example:

sévérité,	severity,	pronounced	sé-vé-ri-té
venez,	come,	..	ve-né
danger,	danger,	...	dan-jé
pommier,	apple-tree,	...	po-mié
cocher,	coachman,	...	co-shé
appeler,	to call,	...	a-pe-lé

25. *E* is open only when marked by the grave or circumflex accent;§ followed by *t*, by double consonants, and an *e* mute, as *lle*, *nne*, &c.; also in monosyllables ending in *es*, the *e* is open, and sounds as *ea* in the word *earth*. For example:

accès,	access,	pronounced	ak-sé
inquiet,	uneasy,	...	in-kî-é
j'appelle,	I call,	...	ja-pè-le
ancienne,	ancient,	...	an-si-è-ne
les,	the,	...	lé.

* *E* short in poetry is not counted as a syllable.

† We must except *altier*, (which may also be pronounced *altié*,) *hier* and *fier*; in those two words the *r* is pronounced.

‡ Except in *cher* (dear), the *r* is pronounced.

26. I is pronounced like double *ee* in the English word *thee*.
 27. O is pronounced like *o* in the English word *no*.
 28. U—no sound like it in English.

COMPOUND VOWELS.

29. Ai, in the beginning, or in the middle of a word, is sounded like an open *è*; at the end of a word, like a sharp *é*. Example:
 aimai, pronounced *è-mé*.
 30. Ais, ait, aient, are pronounced like an open *è*; as, *aimais*, *aimait*, *aimaient*, pronounced *è-mè*.
 31. Ei is pronounced as sharp *é*; as, *reine*, pronounced *ré-ne*.
 32. $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{au} \\ \text{eu} \end{array} \right\}$ have the sound of *o* in *no*.
 33. $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{eu} \\ \text{œu} \end{array} \right\}$ have no exactly corresponding sound in English.
 34. ou has the sound of *oo* in *too*.
 35. oi has the sound of *wa* in *water*.
 36. oui is pronounced as *we*.

NASAL SOUNDS.

Nasal sounds, so called because they are nearest to that organ (the nose), must be sounded very softly to please the ear, and let the air freely through the nose. Indeed a person who speaks through the nose (as it is popularly and incorrectly said,) is a person who does *not* speak through the nose, having a stoppage of that

organ. Therefore, to sound the nasal tones correctly and agreeably, let the air quite free, and not as if the nose were held.

37. $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{an} \\ \text{am} \\ \text{en}^* \\ \text{em} \end{array} \right\}$ are always pronounced *an*, no matter what consonants follow. Examples:

<i>chant,</i>	pronounced	<i>shan.</i>
<i>champs,</i>	...	<i>shan.</i>
<i>temps,</i>	...	<i>tan.</i>

38. $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{in} \\ \text{ain} \\ \text{aim} \\ \text{ein} \\ \text{eim} \end{array} \right\}$ are always pronounced *in*, no matter what consonants follow. Examples:

<i>pin,</i>	pronounced	<i>pin.</i>
<i>pain,</i>	...	<i>pin.</i>
<i>faim,</i>	...	<i>fin.</i>
<i>peint,</i>	...	<i>pin.</i>

39. $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{on} \\ \text{om} \end{array} \right\}$ pronounced somewhat like *on* in the English word *long*; but the *g* is not to be sounded.

40. $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{un} \\ \text{um} \end{array} \right\}$ no sound like them in English.

CONSONANTS.

A consonant is a letter which has no sound of itself, and which cannot be pronounced but when joined to a vowel. The word *consonant* (from the Latin *con*, with, and *sono*, I sound,) signifies that which sounds with something else—a letter which has a sound only in connexion with a vowel.†

* See note (†) page 2.

† "CONSONANTS" would perhaps be better termed articulations, as they are the names given to the several junctions of the organs of speech. In sounding vowels, the passage of the mouth is free and open: in pronouncing consonants, there is the appulse of one organ to another.

There are nineteen consonants, viz. b, c, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, q, r, s, t, v, x, z.

There are two kinds of *h*,—the mute and the aspirated.

41. Before the *h* mute, you must omit the preceding vowels *a* or *e*, and replace them by an apostrophe.

For example :

<i>l'homme,</i>	the man,	pronounced	<i>lo-me</i>
<i>les hommes,</i>	the men,	...	<i>lè-zo-me</i>
<i>l'histoire,</i>	the history,	...	<i>lis-toa-re</i>
<i>les histoires,</i>	the histories,	...	<i>lis-toa-re</i>

42. Alphabetical list of the words where the *h* is mute :

Habile, habit, habiter, habitude, haleine, hameçon, harmonie, hebdomadaire, héberger, hébété, hécatombe, hégire, héliotrope, hémisphère, hémistiche, hémorragie, herbage, herbe, hériter, hérésie, hermétique, hermine, hermite, héroïne, héroïque, héroïsme, hésiter, hétérodoxe, hétérogène, heure, heureux, hexagone, hexamètre, hier, hiéroglyphe, hirondelle, histoire, histrion, hiver, holocauste, homélie, homicide, hommage, homme, homogène, honnête, honneur, hôpital, horizon, horloge, horoscope, horreur, horrible, hospice, hospitalier, hostie, hostilité, hôte, hôtel, hôtellerie, hôtesse, huile, huissier, hûtre, humain, humble, humecter, humeur, humidité, humilité, hyacinthe, hydre, hydromel, hydropisie, hymen, hymne, hyperbole, hypocrisie, hypothèque, hypothèse.

43. When the *h* is aspirated,* the vowel of the preceding word is not omitted, and the vowel following the *h* is pronounced a little through the throat, and the *h* not sounded at all. Examples :

<i>le héros,</i>	the hero,	pronounced	<i>le é-ro</i>
<i>les héros,</i>	the heroes,	...	<i>lè é-ro</i>
<i>la haie,</i>	the hedge,	...	<i>la aie</i>
<i>les haies,</i>	the hedges,	...	<i>lè aie</i>

* *Observe.* In fact, the *h* is nothing but a sign of aspiration, for it is never pronounced in any case whatever ; but it is the vowel following the *h* which is aspirated.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

Can a vowel be pronounced by itself?—Yes. Can a consonant?—No. What must you have to sound a consonant?—A vowel. Pronounce the three kinds of *e*.—See Nos. 23, 24, 25. Can Nos. 29 to 36 be called diphthong?—No. Why?—See No. 2. Are consonants sounded at the end of a word?—No, except *c*, *f*, *l*, *n*, *r*. See Du Gué's Key on Pronunciation, where you will find all the rules, followed by their exceptions. Is the *h* any use in French?—No, only to show the etymology or derivation of the word, and is never pronounced; and the list of almost all the words where the *h* is mute, is given in No. 42. *H* aspirated is, in every Dictionary, marked thus ('H.)

Classify the consonants?—

LABIALS—*b*, *p*, *v*, *f*, *m*, because pronounced with the lips. Examples: Bible, père, vite, feu, mère.

LINGUALS—*d*, *t*, *n*, *l*, *r*, because pronounced with the tongue. Examples: de, tu, notre, livre, rivage.

PALATALS—*g*, *j*, *k*, *q*, *l*, or *ll* liquid. Examples: gingembre, jé-suite, kermès,* quotité, travail, fille.

DENTALS or **Hissings**—*s*, *c*, *x*, *z*, *ch*, pronounced with the teeth. Examples: se, ci, xénie, zigzag,† cheval.

NASALS—*gn*. Examples: digne, Cologne, signal; styled nasal, being sounded near that organ, allowing the air freely through the nose.

GUTTURAL—*h*, which is only a sign to show that the following vowel is aspirated;‡ but the *h* is never to be pronounced.

ON PARTS OF SPEECH.

We understand by speech, in grammar, the enunciation of the thought by symbols, expressed orally or by writing; that is to say, by words articulated or written.

* Pronounce the final *s*.

† Pronounce *zig-zag*, sounding the *g* in both syllables.

‡ Aspirated signifies hard or harsh.

44. **THE ARTICLE,*** which limits or determines the substantive.
45. **THE SUBSTANTIVE,*** which expresses an object.
46. **THE ADJECTIVE,*** which qualifies the substantive.
47. **THE PRONOUN,*** used instead of a noun.
48. **THE VERB,*** which expresses an action.
49. **THE ADVERB,†** which modifies the verb and adjective in a complete manner.
50. **THE PREPOSITION,†** which shows the relation of one word to another.
51. **THE CONJUNCTION,†** which links one phrase with another.
52. **THE INTERJECTION,†** or **EXCLAMATION,** which expresses a sudden movement of the soul.

ON NUMBERS.

There are two numbers; the singular, speaking of one person or one thing; and the plural, of many persons or things. In each number there are three persons and two genders, masculine and feminine. No neuter gender in French.

ON CASES.

There are six cases in French, as well as in the dead languages; if the terminations in the substan-

*53.—The articles, substantives, adjectives, pronouns, and verbs, are declinable; that is to say, change their terminations, and take the mark of the feminine, plural, persons, &c.

†54.—The adverbs, prepositions, conjunctions, and interjections, do not ever change their terminations.

tive do not vary, the articles do. The six cases are of the greatest importance, especially to those versed in the classics.

55. **NOMINATIVE*** or **SUBJECT**, is the person or thing (*in all languages*) which expresses the action performed by the verb.

56. **GENITIVE**, called also possessive or determinative, because it determines or limits the extent of a preceding substantive.

57. **DATIVE**, or **Directive**.—It points out the direction, tendency, or relation that one word has to another in the sentence.

58. **ACCUSATIVE**, or object of a verb, is the person or thing which receives the action of that verb.†

59. **VOCATIVE**, or **Calling**, the case used in addressing an individual.

60. **ABLATIVE**, or **Prepositional**, the case generally dependant on the preposition.

* The nominative of a verb is a noun, a pronoun, an infinitive, (as, *jouer est folie*,) or sometimes an entire sentence. We know the nominative or subject of a verb by putting *who* before the verb; the answer will be the subject; as, *Le maître enseigne*, the master teaches: (who teaches? answer, the master?—master, then, is the subject.) *Le maître punit son élève*, the master punishes his pupil: (who punishes? answer, the master,—master, then, is the subject.) In passive verbs the subject is the person or the thing which receives the action; as, *L'élève est puni par son maître*, the pupil is punished by his master: (who is punished? answer, the pupil; pupil, then, is the subject.)

† We know the object of a verb by putting *what* before it; the answer will be the object; as, *Je bats l'enfant*, I beat the child: (what do I beat? answer, the child;—child, then, is the object.) *Il mange une pomme*, he eats an apple: (what does he eat? answer, an apple;—apple, then, is the object.)

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

How do you know when a word is in the nominative?—It performs the action expressed by the verb. How do you know a noun in the genitive?—It is produced by another substantive. How do you know a dative?—It shows direction, tendency. How do you know an accusative or object?—It receives the action expressed by the verb. How do you know the vocative?—It calls or addresses a person. How do you know the ablative?—It is always governed by a preposition.

FOURTH LESSON.

ON ARTICLES.

An Article* is a word placed before substantives (*or words used substantively*,) to point out their case, gender, and number; also to particularise them, and must agree with the noun to which it relates. In French there are three kinds, viz.: the Definite, the Indefinite, and the Partitive, which are declined as follows. (*There is no neuter gender in French.*)

SYNOPSIS TABLE OF THE ARTICLES.

DEFINITE ARTICLE.

SINGULAR.				PLUR.
Mas.	Fem.	Only used before a vowel or h mute.		Mas. & Fem.
		Mas. & Fem.		
Nom.	<i>le</i>	<i>la</i>	<i>l'</i>	<i>les</i> the
Gen.	<i>du</i>	<i>de la</i>	<i>de l'</i>	<i>des</i> of the
Dat.	<i>au</i>	<i>à la</i>	<i>à l'</i>	<i>aux</i> to the
Acc.	<i>le</i>	<i>la</i>	<i>l'</i>	<i>les</i> the
Voc.	<i>ô</i>	<i>ô</i>	<i>ô</i>	<i>ô</i> o
Abl.	<i>du</i>	<i>de la</i>	<i>de l'</i>	<i>des</i> from the

* Articles ought to be called determinative adjectives.

INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

	SINGULAR.			PLUR.	
	Mas.	Fem.		Mas. & Fem.	
Nom. & Acc.	<i>un</i>	<i>une</i>	<i>a or an</i>	<i>des</i>	*
Gen. & Abl.	<i>d'un</i>	<i>d'une</i>	of <i>a</i>	<i>des</i>	of
Dative	<i>à un</i>	<i>à une</i>	to <i>a</i>	<i>à des</i>	to

PARTITIVE ARTICLE.

	SINGULAR.			PLUR.	
	Mas.	Fem.	Before a vowel or <i>h</i> mute.	Mas. & Fem.	
			Mas. & Fem.		
Nom. & Acc.	<i>du</i>	<i>de la</i>	<i>de l'</i>	<i>des</i>	some
Gen. & Abl.	<i>de</i>	<i>de</i>	<i>d'</i>	<i>de</i>	of some
Dative	<i>à du</i>	<i>à de la</i>	<i>à de l'</i>	<i>à des</i>	to some

DEFINITE ARTICLE.

The definite article points out a particular thing.

- 61.—*Le* is only used before every substantive masculine singular, beginning with a consonant. For example :

	SINGULAR.	
Nominative	<i>le jour</i>	the day
Genitive	<i>du jour</i>	of the day
Dative	<i>au jour</i>	to the day
Accusative	<i>le jour</i>	the day
Vocative	<i>ô jour</i>	O day
Ablative	<i>du jour</i>	from the day

- 62.—*La* is only used before every substantive feminine singular, beginning with a consonant. For example :

* See No. 67.

SINGULAR.

Nominative	<i>la nuit</i>	the night
Genitive	<i>de la nuit</i>	of the night
Dative	<i>à la nuit</i>	to the night
Accusative	<i>la nuit</i>	the night
Vocative	<i>ô nuit</i>	O night
Ablative	<i>de la nuit</i>	from the night

63.—*L'* is used before all substantives singular, beginning with a vowel or *h* mute. For example :

SINGULAR.

Nominative	<i>l'ami</i>	the friend
Genitive	<i>de l'ami</i>	of the friend
Dative	<i>à l'ami</i>	to the friend
Accusative	<i>l'ami</i>	the friend
Vocative	<i>ô ami</i>	O friend
Ablative	<i>de l'ami</i>	from the friend

64.—*Les* is used before all substantives plural. For example :

PLURAL.

Nom.	<i>les jours*</i>	<i>les nuits*</i>	<i>les amis*</i>	the*
Gen.	<i>des jours</i>	<i>des nuits</i>	<i>des amis</i>	of the
Dat.	<i>aux jours</i>	<i>aux nuits</i>	<i>aux amis</i>	to the
Acc.	<i>les jours</i>	<i>les nuits</i>	<i>les amis</i>	the
Voc.	<i>ô jours</i>	<i>ô nuits</i>	<i>ô amis</i>	o
Abl.	<i>des jours</i>	<i>des nuits</i>	<i>des amis</i>	from the

The indefinite article points out no particular thing.

65.—*Un* is used before every substantive masculine singular. For example :

MASCULINE.

Nom. & Acc.	<i>un homme</i>	a man
Gen. & Abl.	<i>d'un homme</i>	of a man
Dative	<i>à un homme</i>	to a man

* *Les jours*, the days; *les nuits*, the nights; *les amis*, the friends.

66.—*Une* is used before every substantive feminine singular. For example :

FEMININE.		
Nom. & Acc.	<i>une amie</i>	a friend
Gen. & Abl.	<i>d'une amie</i>	of a friend
Dative	<i>à une amie</i>	to a friend

MASCULINE AND FEMININE.

67.—*Des* is used before all substantives plural. For example :

Nom. & Acc.	<i>des hommes*</i>	men	<i>des amis</i>	friends
Gen. & Abl.	<i>des hommes</i>	of men	<i>des amis</i>	of friends
Dative	<i>à des hommes</i>	to men	<i>des amis</i>	to friends

PARTITIVE ARTICLE.

The partitive article is used before a substantive, not speaking of the totality of the specious, but only implying a part of it, and when in English the word "some" may be understood.

68. *Du* is used before every substantive masculine singular beginning with a consonant. For example :

SINGULAR MASCULINE.

Nom. and Acc.	<i>du fruit,</i>	some fruit
Gen. and Abl.	<i>de fruit,</i>	of some fruit
Dative	<i>à du fruit,</i>	to some fruit

69. *De la* is used before every substantive feminine singular beginning with a consonant. For example :

SINGULAR FEMININE.

Nom. and Acc.	<i>de la viande,</i>	some meat
Gen. and Abl.	<i>de viande,</i>	of some meat
Dative	<i>à de la viande,</i>	to some meat

* The indefinite article in English has no plural; therefore decline all substantives plural in an indefinite sense: thus, Nom. *des hommes*, men; Gen. *des hommes*, of men; Dat. *à des hommes*, to men, &c.

70. *De l'* is used before all substantives singular, beginning with a vowel or *h* mute. For example :

SINGULAR.

Nom. and Acc.	<i>de l'ananas,</i>	some pine apple
Gen. and Abl.	<i>d'ananas,</i>	of some pine apple
Dative	<i>à de l'ananas,</i>	to some pine apple

71. *Des* is used before all substantives plural. For example :

PLURAL.

Nom. and Acc.	<i>des fruits,</i>	some fruits
Gen. and Abl.	<i>de fruits,</i>	of some fruits
Dative	<i>à des fruits,</i>	to some fruits

72. Articles are placed before substantives or words taken substantively, to show their definition, cases, number, and gender. For example :

Les hommes sont méchants,	Men are wicked.
L'histoire est une étude utile,	History is an useful study.
Le Mont Blanc est la plus haute montagne en* Europe,	Mount Blanc is the highest mountain in Europe.
Un Monsieur désire vous parler,	A gentleman wishes to speak to you.
Monsieur† le chevalier est à la porte,	The baronet is at the door.
L'Irlande est un pays plat,	Ireland is a flat country.
J'irai aux Indes orientales,	I will go to the East Indies.
L'Angleterre est un pays puissant,	England is a powerful country.
Il apprend l'Anglais,‡ et l'Italien,‡ et moi le Français,‡	He learns French and Italian, and I French.

* No article after the preposition *en*.

†73. Monsieur, Messieurs, Madame, Mesdames, Mademoiselle, Mesdemoiselles, Monseigneur, Messeigneurs, take *le*, *la*, or *les* after them, if the following word is a title. For example : Monsieur le Duc, Madame la Comtesse, Messieurs les Amiraux, &c.

‡ An article is placed before *Anglais*, *Italien*, and *Français*, because they are adjectives taken substantively. In this phrase, *Il parle Anglais, Italien, et Français*, why not use an article?—Because they are taken adverbally, modifying the verb *parle*.

Donnez moi la grammaire,* et le dictionnaire* Français,	Give me the French grammar and dictionary.
Vendez moi du pain, de la viande, et du vin,	Sell me some bread, some meat, and some wine.
Pour le dîner ayez des petits- pâtés et des petits-pois,	For dinner have some <i>petits- pâtés</i> and some green peas.
Les deux† lettres que j'ai re- çues sont de mon frère,	The two letters which I have received are from my bro- ther.
Les quatre‡ volumes de La Harpe que j'avais perdus, je les ai retrouvés,	The four volumes of La Harpe which I had lost, I have found them.

74. The latter of two substantives being *put* in the genitive, requires an article in the genitive. For example:

Le collier <i>du</i> chien,	The collar of the dog.
La clef <i>de</i> la chambre,	The key of the chamber.
Le livre <i>de</i> l'ami,	The book of the friend.
Les fers <i>des</i> chevaux,	The shoes of the horses.
Le chapeau <i>d'un</i> homme,	The man's hat.
Le manteau <i>d'une</i> femme,	The woman's cloak.
Les souliers <i>des</i> enfants,	The children's shoes.

75. The adjective *tout* (when it means the whole, every,) takes an article after it. For example:

<i>Tout le peuple</i> , all the people.	<i>Tous les hommes</i> , every man.
<i>Toute la ville</i> , all the city.	<i>Toutes les années</i> , every year.

76. If many substantives are united to describe an object, you may or you may not use the article. For example:

L'armée ennemie ravagea les villes, les villages, et les ha- meaux.	L'armée ennemie ravagea villes, villages, et hameaux.
---	--

* You place no article before the titles or headings of books.—For example: *Dictionnaire Français*, *Grammaire Latine*, &c.

† You only place an article before cardinal adjectives, when they particularize; in any other case do not put an article. For example: *Deux shillings la livre*, two shillings a pound; *quatre livres le quintal*, four pounds a hundred.

RULES WHEN NO ARTICLES ARE USED.

77. Before substantives in the genitive or ablative case, taken in an indefinite sense, preceded by an adjective or participle past, use only (*de*). For example :

Il est coupable <i>de</i> crime,	He is guilty of crime.
Elle est accablée <i>de</i> douleur,	She is overwhelmed with grief.
Il est chargé <i>de</i> ramée,	He is laden with green wood.
Il est bouffi <i>d'</i> orgueil,	He is puffed up with pride.

78. Before the latter of two substantives in the genitive, when it expresses the country, nature, species, or contents of the first substantive, use only (*de*.) For example :

La reine <i>d'</i> Angleterre est aimable,	The queen of England is amiable.
Le vin <i>de</i> champagne,	Champagne wine.
De la laine <i>de</i> Cashemire,	Cashmere wool.
Un pot <i>de</i> fleurs,	A pot of flowers.
La femme <i>de</i> chambre,	The lady's maid.
Une fille <i>de</i> chambre,	A chamber-maid.
Une pinte <i>de</i> bière,	A pint of beer.
Un pot <i>de</i> lait,	A quart of milk.
Un mal <i>de</i> tête,	A head-ache.
Un nuage <i>de</i> vapeur,†	A cloud of vapour.
Une montre <i>d'</i> or,	A gold watch.
Emplissez la caraffe <i>de</i> sirop de framboise,	Fill up the bottle with raspberry vinegar.
Une bouteille <i>d'</i> huile,	A bottle of oil.

Observe. It is, however, put in the dative when the second substantive expresses the use of the first, or expresses the trade of persons selling eatables. For example :

Un vaisseau à vapeur,	A steam vessel.
Un moulin à papier,	A paper-mill.
Une chambre à manger,	A dining-room.
De la poudre à canon,	Gun-powder.
La foire aux chevaux,	The horse-fair.
Des armes à feu,	Fire-arms.
Un pot à fleur,	A flower-pot.
Le pot au lait,	The milk-vessel.
La bouteille à huile,	The oil-bottle.
Des bouches à feu,	Some cannons.

La femme* aux pommes,
 La fille* aux huîtres,
 L'homme* au beurre,
 Le garçon* aux lapins,

The apple-woman.
 The oyster-girl.
 The butter-man.
 The rabbit-boy.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

Do you understand well the difference of these phrases—why No. 76 is in the genitive, and No. 77 is in the dative?—Yes, because when the second substantive expresses the use of the first, or expresses the trade of persons selling eatables, you must have it in the dative. *Un pot de fleurs*, signifies a pot full of flowers; *un pot à fleur*, signifies a pot to contain a plant. *Un pot de lait*, signifies a quart of milk; *un pot à lait*, signifies a pot to contain milk, &c.

79. Before adjectives taken indefinitely, use only (*de.*)
 For example :

Vendez-moi de bon† vin, or de bons† vins,	Sell me good wine.
Achetez-moi de bonnet† viande, de bon† œufs, et de bon pain.	Buy me good meat, good eggs, and good bread.
Je vous envoie de beaux† che- vaux.	I send you beautiful horses.

80. *Observe.* However, if you were speaking of a particular thing, you would be obliged to use the article. For example :

Vendez-moi du bon† vin que vous me fîtes goûter,	Sell me some of the good wine which you made me taste.
Je vous envoie les beaux† chevaux que je vous ai vendus,	I send you the beautiful horses which I have sold to you.
Voilà les belles cerises et les grosses poires que vous avez achetées,	There are the beautiful cherries and the large pears which you have bought.

81. Before substantives and adjectives taken indefi-
 nitely, and preceded by the verbs *ajouter*,† *avoir*,†

* It would be better French to say, *Le marchand ou la mar-
 chande de pommes, d'huîtres, de beurre, de lapins, &c.*

† This adjective is one of the 34 which is placed before its sub-
 stantive, see lesson on adjectives.

‡ For the principal idiomatical expressions where the article is not
 used, see No. 82.

être, faire,** or the words *ni, soit, sans, jamais*, use no article **WHATEVER**. For example :

J'ai ajouté foi à ses paroles,	I have believed him.
J'ai soif,	I am thirsty.
J'étais altéré,	I was thirsty.
Le mensonge est bassesse,	Falsehood is despicable.
Il me faisait peur,	He frightened me.
Ni amis, ni ennemis, ne furent reçus,	Neither friends nor foes were received.
Il mourut sans titre, sans honneur,	He died without title; without honour,
Soit amour, soit honneur,	Be it love or honour,
Jamais auteur ne fut plus attrayant, ni plus amusant,	Never was author more attractive, nor more amusing.

*82. Here follow the principal idiomatical expressions where the article is not used :

<i>Ajouter foi</i> , to believe.	<i>Faire plaisir</i> , to oblige.
<i>Avoir affaire</i> , to have business.	... <i>semblant</i> , to pretend.
... <i>besoin</i> , to want.	... <i>tort</i> , to wrong.
... <i>carte blanche</i> , to have full power.	... <i>voile</i> , to sail.
... <i>chaud</i> , to feel warm.	... <i>visite</i> , to visit.
... <i>compassion</i> , to commiserate.	<i>Lâcher prise</i> , to let go one's hold.
... <i>coutume</i> , to be accustomed.	<i>Mettre fin</i> , to put an end.
... <i>dessein</i> , to intend.	... <i>ordre</i> , to arrange.
... <i>envie</i> , to desire.	<i>Parler affaires</i> , to speak of business.
... <i>faim</i> , to be hungry.	... <i>raison</i> , to reason.
... <i>froid</i> , to feel cold.	... <i>Allemand</i> , to speak German.
... <i>honte</i> , to feel ashamed.	... <i>Anglais</i> , to speak English.
... <i>mal</i> , to feel pain.	... <i>Français</i> , to speak French.
... <i>patience</i> , to have patience.	... <i>Italien</i> , to speak Italian.
... <i>peur</i> , to fear.	<i>Perdre courage</i> , to despond.
... <i>pitié</i> , to pity.	... <i>patience</i> , to lose patience.
... <i>raison</i> , to be right.	<i>Porter bonheur</i> , to bring good luck.
... <i>soif</i> , to be thirsty.	... <i>envie</i> , to envy.
... <i>soin</i> , to take care.	<i>Prendre courage</i> , to cheer up.
... <i>tort</i> , to be wrong.	... <i>garde</i> , to take care.
<i>Demander pardon</i> , to beg pardon.	... <i>patience</i> , to bear patiently.
<i>Donner carte blanche</i> , to give full power.	... <i>plaisir</i> , to delight.
<i>Entendre raison</i> , to listen to reason.	... <i>racine</i> , to take root.
<i>Faire attention</i> , to mind.	<i>Rendre visite</i> , to visit, to pay a visit.
... <i>face</i> , to face.	<i>Tenir tête</i> , to oppose.
... <i>grâce</i> , to pardon.	... &c. &c.
... <i>peur</i> , to frighten.	

83. After substantives and adverbs of quantity, use only (*de*.) For example :

Sorte de gens,	Kind of people,
Espèce de vin,	Kind of wine.
Abondance de vivre,	Abundance of provisions.
Mélange de fleurs,	A mixture of flowers.
Il a autant d'esprit que son frère,	He has as much mind as his brother.
Il y a beaucoup de fruits cette année,	There is a great deal of fruit this year.

84. *Observe.* After the adverbs *la plupart* and *bien*, you must use an article. For example :

La plupart des hommes,	Most of men.
Il a bien de l'argent,	He has a great deal of money.
Avez vous bien des livres,	Have you a great many books.

85. *Observe.* *Que*, *quoi*, and *quel*, used in a sentence of admiration, take (*de*) after them. For example :

Que de fracas !	What noise !
Quoi de plus grand !	What greater !
Quel spectacle !	What spectacle
Quels gestes !	What gestures !
Quelles grimaces !	What grimaces !

86. Substantives used adverbially, take no article. For example :

Il court avec vitesse,	He runs quickly.
Il agit avec prudence,	He acts prudently.
Vous parlez avec éloquence,	You speak eloquently.

87. After the preposition *en*,* no article can be used. For example :

Je vais en France,	I am going to France.
J'irai en Amérique,	I will go to America.
Je vais en carrosse,	I am going in a carriage.

88. *Observe.* When speaking of distant places, the proper noun takes an article, and therefore cannot be governed by *en*. For example :—Je vais aux Indes, aux Antilles, au Brésil, au Pérou, au Japon, &c. In general the names of provinces, kingdoms,

*89. But before the words *air*, *honneur*, and *absence*, you must use an article ; as, *en l'air*, *en l'honneur*, *en l'absence*.

empires, &c., take an article ; * as, *l'Angleterre, de la France, à l'Amérique, le Portugal, du Poitou, à la Bourgogne, &c.*

See No. 72.

90. In the genitive and ablative PROPER NAMES take the article *du* when masculine, and only *de* when feminine ; as,

<i>l'Histoire du Languedoc,</i>	The History of Languedoc.
<i>l'Histoire du Roussillon,</i>	The History of Roussillon.
<i>Je viens du Portugal,</i>	I come from Portugal.
<i>l'Histoire de Bourgogne,</i>	The History of Burgundy.
<i>l'Histoire d'Angleterre,</i>	The English History.
<i>Une lettre de Russie,</i>	A letter from Russia.
<i>Je viens de France,</i>	I come from France.
<i>Il arrive de Turquie,</i>	He arrives from Turkey.

91. Names of men,† women, and cities‡ take no article ; as,

<i>Duguesclin et Bonaparte</i>	Duguesclin and Bonaparte
<i>étaient de grands hommes,</i>	were great men.
<i>Il parle de Jean, ou, de</i>	He speaks of John, or of
<i>Julie,</i>	Julia.
<i>Il arrive de Paris,</i>	He arrives from Paris.
<i>Je vais à Dublin,</i>	I go to Dublin.
<i>Partons pour Howth,</i>	Let us go to Howth.

* 89. You must except those which take their names from the capital city, or from the proper name of some person which takes no article, as *Alger*, (Algiers) ; *Avignon* ; *Gènes*, (Genoa) ; *Genève*, (Geneva) ; *Florence* ; *Maroc*, (Morocco) ; *Tunis*, *Tripoli*, *Venise*, *St. Vincent*, *St. Domingue*, (St. Domingo), &c. which take no article.

† 93. However, some proper names of renowned men take the article, but they are few, such are *l'Arioste*, *le Tasse*, *le Blanc*, *la Place*, *la Fontaine*, *la Grange*, *la Porte*, &c., and when they are applied to point out a particular object, they take the article : as, *le Dieu des Chrétiens*, *the God of Christians* ; *les Cicérons*, *les Démosthènes*, *les Molières*, *les la Fontaine*, *sont rares*, &c.

‡ 94. Except the following, which take an article ; as, *le Caire*, (*Cairo*), *la Chapelle*, *le Havre*, *la Havanne* (*Havannah*), *la Haye*, (*the Hague*), *la Mecque* (*Mecca*) *la Rochelle*.

92. The possessive and demonstrative adjectives, personal, demonstrative, relative, and the interrogative pronouns take no article; they are declined with the prepositions *de* and *à*.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

What have you observed on the substantives and adverbs of quantity? They follow the same rule as in English, they take *de* after them, see 83. Is there any exception? Yes, see 84. What do you remark on 85? That *que* and *quoi* take *de* after them, but *quel* takes nothing. Proper names in the genitive and ablative do they take an article? They do, when masculine, but take only (*de*) when feminine. No. 90.

FIFTH LESSON.

ON SUBSTANTIVES.

95. The word substantive comes from the word substance, which signifies something that is animated or inanimated, corporeal or incorporeal, of which we can say that it subsists..
96. The substantive or noun is the part of speech which serves to design a person or thing, which alone, by itself, points out an object existant* or ideal,† something that exists materially or immate-

* 97. Existant is said of a thing which exists, which is cognizable by sense, which we can see, touch, smell, taste, hear, or feel. The words *maison*, house; *table*, table; *parfum*, perfume; *pain*, bread; *bruit*, noise, are substantives, for we see a house, we touch a table, we smell a perfume, we taste bread, we hear noise, we feel pain.

† 98. Ideal is said of a thing which has no real existence, and which exists only in the imagination or opinion. We cannot see a thought, we cannot touch it, neither smell it, &c.

rially, as, *homme*, man ; *cheval*, horse ; *chandelier*, candlestick ; *blancheur*, whiteness ; *pensée*, thought. There are three kinds of nouns.

99. The **PROPER NOUN**, (*commonly called a proper name*,) is that which relates only to persons and places, thus, *Jaques*, James ; *François*, Francis ; *L'Angleterre*, England ; *L'Irlande*, Ireland ; *Dublin*, Dublin ; *le Shannon*, the Shannon ; *les Alpes*, the Alps ; are proper names.

100. The **COMMON NOUN** is that which relates to all of a kind, to all the individuals and all the objects of the same species, as, *homme*, man ; *femme*, woman ; *cheval*, horse ; *chien*, dog ; *ville*, town ; *vertu*, virtue.

101. The **COLLECTIVE NOUN** is that which designs the union of many persons or many things as making a whole ; as, *le peuple*, the people ; *une flotte*, a fleet ; *multitude de*, a multitude of ; *une troupe de*, a troop of.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

How do you know a substantive? Anything which exists that we can see, touch, smell, taste, or hear, or form an idea of, must be a noun. What do you mean by proper noun? Proper noun belongs only to one person or place, see 99. What do you mean by common? Common noun relates to all of one kind, see 100. What is called collective noun? Those which comprise the union of many persons or things making one. See 101. They always require the preposition (*de*) after them.

SIXTH LESSON.

ON GENDERS.

SUBSTANTIVES have two genders—the masculine and the feminine ; two numbers—the singular and the plural.

RULES UPON GENDERS.

There are *Twenty-four Thousand* Nouns in the French language ; to know their genders was one of the greatest difficulties in the language, which is now determined at *once* by their terminations and sounds, as it will be found by the following rules.

Gender is the property which substantives have to represent the distinction of sexes. Substantives have only two genders, the *masculine* and the *feminine*, (there is no NEUTER in French) ; and two numbers, singular and plural.

Observe.—To those who understand Latin, the genders present no difficulty ; as every substantive that is masculine or neuter in *Latin*, is masculine in *French* ; and every word that is feminine in *Latin*, is feminine in French.*

Nouns belonging to men,† and to male animals, are masculine ; as, *un homme*, a man ; *un roi*, a king ; *un cheval*, a horse.

* We must except *rivus*, *la rivière*, which is masculine in Latin, and feminine in French :—*comma*, *le cheveu* ; *frons*, *la front* ; *palpebræ*, *les sourcis* ; which are feminine in Latin, and masculine in French ; *crus*, *la jambe* ; *femur*, *la cuisse* ; *mare*, *la mer* ; which are neuter in Latin, and feminine in French.

† We must except *une estafette*, an express ; *une sentinelle*, a sentry ; and *une vedette*, a sentinel on horseback ; *la ronde*, the round ; *la patrouille*, the patrol ; which are feminine, though they belong to men.

The Feminine gender belongs to women, and female animals; as, *une femme*, a woman; *une reine*, a queen; *une jument*, a mare.

*Nouns Epicène** are those which are used for both genders; as, when we say, (masculine) *un éléphant*, an elephant; *un enfant*, a child; *un renard*, a fox; *un rat*, a rat; it applies equally to the male as to the female. However, if we would particularize the gender, we must express the words male and female (*mâle* and *féfelle*); as, *un éléphant mâle*, *un éléphant féfelle*; *une truite mâle*, *une truite féfelle*, &c.

The masculine and the feminine genders have been given to inanimate objects, which are neither male nor female, by imitation, as it were, or from some resemblance, real or imaginary; as *le crayon*, the pencil; *le tableau*, the picture; *la plume*, the pen; *la porte*, the door.

MASCULINE GENDER.

102. Nouns belonging to men, or male animals, are masculine, as,

Un homme, a man.

Un cheval, a horse.

103. Names of days, months, and seasons are masculine, as,

Dimanche, Sunday.

L'été, Summer.

Mardi, Tuesday.

L'automne, Autumn.

Juin, June.

Le carême, Lent.

Août, August.

L'hiver, Winter.

Except when the word *mi* is prefixed, then they are Feminine, as—

La mi-été,

middle of Summer.

La mi-Juin,

middle of June.

La mi-Août,

middle of August.

* *Epicène* is derived from the Greek word *epicœna*, signifying common to both.

104. Names of empires, states, kingdoms, provinces, &c. are masculine, as,

Le Portugal, Portugal. *Le Chili*, Chili. *Le Poitou*, Poitou.

Except all those ending in *e* short, which are Feminine, as,

L'Angleterre, England. *La Hollande*, Holland.
L'Irlande, Ireland. *La Suisse*, Switzerland.

Observe—However, the following are masculine,

Le Mexique, Mexico. *Le Péloponèse*, Peloponesus.

105. Names of cities, towns, villages, &c. are masculine, as,

Londres et Dublin sont beaux, London and Dublin are beautiful.

Except la Rochelle. If you doubt the gender of a city, use the word *ville*; as,

La ville de Londres est grande, The city of London is large.
La ville de Dublin est belle, The city of Dublin is beautiful.

106. Names of mountains are masculine, as

Le Mont Blanc, Mount Blanc.
Le Righi, Righi.
Le Simplon, Simplon.

Except all those ending in *e* short, which are feminine, as

Les Alpes, Alps. *Les Cévennes*, the Cevennes.
Les Pyrénées, Pyrenees. *Les Voges*, the Voages.

107. Names of trees and shrubs are masculine, as

Le cèdre, the cedar. *Le hêtre*, the beech.
Le chêne, the oak. *Le frêne*, the ash.

Except the following, which are feminine, as

Une aubépine, white-thorn. *Une vigne*, a vine.
Une épine, briar. *Une yeuse*, a yew.
Une ronce, bramble.

108. Names of flowers are all masculine, as

Le jasmin, the jessamine. *Le lilas*, the lilac.

Except those ending in *e* mute, which are feminine. However, *Le chèvrefeuille*, and *le narcisse*, are masculine.

109. Names of winds are masculine, as

<i>L'est</i>	(or) <i>l'orient</i> ,	the east.
<i>L'ouest</i>	(or) <i>l'occident</i> ,	the west.
<i>Le sud</i>	(or) <i>midi</i>	the south.
<i>Le nord</i>	(or) <i>septentrion</i> ,	the north.

Except the two following, which are feminine :—

La bise, north-east wind. *La tramontane*, north wind.

110. Names of metals and half-metals are masculine, as

<i>Le cuivre</i> ,	copper.	<i>L'argent</i> ,	silver.
<i>L'or</i> ,	gold.	<i>Le platine</i> ,	platina.

111. Names of elementary and binary bodies are masculine, as,

<i>L'oxigène</i> ,	oxygen.	<i>Les sulfates</i> ,	sulphates.
<i>L'hydrogène</i> ,	hydrogen.	<i>Les nitrates</i> ,	nitrates.

112. Names of decimals and measures are masculine, as

<i>Un centime</i>	a hundredth part.
<i>Un gramme</i> ,	a third part of a drachm.
<i>Un litre</i> ,	a pint.

113. Names signifying a language or an idiom are masculine, as

Le Français, the French. *Le Gasconisme*, the Gasconism.
L'Anglais, the English. *Le Portugais*, the Portuguese.

114. Words taken substantively are masculine, as

<i>Le boire</i> ,	the drinking.	<i>L'agréable</i> ,	the agreeable.
<i>Le manger</i> ,	the eating.	<i>Un si</i> ,	an if.
<i>L'utile</i> ,	the useful.	<i>Un mais</i> ,	a but.

115. Names of places employed to express their produce are masculine, as

<i>Du Champagne</i> ,	Champaigne wine.
<i>Du Gruyère</i> ,	Gruyere cheese.
<i>Du Bourdeaux</i> ,	Bordeaux wine.
<i>Un Cachemire</i> ,	a Cashmere shawl.

116. Names of colours are masculine, as

<i>Le rouge</i> ,	the red.	<i>Le bleu</i> ,	the blue.
<i>Le vert</i> ,	the green.	<i>Le brun</i> ,	the brown.

117. Compound nouns are masculine, as

<i>Un essuie-mains,</i>	a towel.
<i>Un passe-partout,</i>	a master-key.

118. Names of birds ending with a consonant, or in *au* and *ai* are masculine for both sexes; those ending in *e*, *is*, and *ix*, are feminine for both sexes.

119. Names of fishes, ending with a consonant, are masculine, and ending with a vowel, feminine.

FEMININE GENDER.

120. Nouns belonging to women, or female animals, are feminine, as

<i>Une femme,</i> a woman.	<i>Une biche,</i> a hind.
----------------------------	---------------------------

121. Names of feasts* are feminine, as

<i>La Sainte Yves,</i>	Saint Yves,
<i>La Saint Jean,</i>	St. John's-day.
<i>La Toussaint,</i>	All Saints'-day.
<i>La mi-carême,</i>	Half Lent.
<i>Pâques,†</i>	Easter.

122. Words having the following terminations are feminine.‡

e (short), *té*,§ *tié*, *ée*,|| *ie*,¶ *ion*, *son*,** *zon*.

* *Observe*—You must except

<i>Carnaval,</i>	Carnival,	} which are masculine.
<i>Noël,</i>	Christmas,	

Also when the word *jour* is prefixed; as, *le jour de l'an*, New Year's Day.

† *Pâque* (Easter) in the singular is always masculine, except in this phrase—*la Pâque des Juifs*, the Passover of the Jews.

‡ The student is requested to learn these terminations, as he will have no more difficulty in finding the gender of nouns, all other terminations being **MASCULINE**.

§ See No. 132 and 133.

|| See No. 137, for exceptions.

¶ See No. 139, for exceptions.

** *Son*—this termination is only feminine when the *s* has the sound of *z*.

GENERAL VIEW
OF ALL MASCULINE TERMINATIONS BY THE
SOUNDS.

123. No matter what consonant may follow, when the last syllable in the word sounds thus—

a,* é,† è, i, oi, (*sounding like wa*)

o, u,

c, f, l, n, r,

sson,‡ çon, yon,§

must be *Masculine*.

GENERAL VIEW
OF ALL FEMININE TERMINATIONS BY THE
SOUNDS.

124. Words ending and sounding in these terminations are *Feminine*.

e,|| (short), té,¶ tié, ée,** ie,†† ion,

son, (*feminine when the s has the sound of an z.*) zon.

* For each letter, see from No. 125 to No. 171.

† Words ending in ez, ier, ger, cher, are pronounced like sharp é, therefore must be a *masculine* termination.

‡ Sson is *masculine* when the s or ss are pronounced hard.

§ Only *masculine* having the (y) before on. See No. 148.

|| See for e short No. 130 and 131.

¶ This termination, é (sharp) only *feminine* when preceded by a t. See No. 132-4.

** See No. 136 and 137.

†† See No. 138 and 139.

HOW TO FIND THE GENDER OF THE NOUN BY ITS
TERMINATION AND SOUND.

125. *a*. All nouns ending in (*a*) or when you hear the sound of *a* in the last syllable, no matter by what consonant it may be followed, that noun is MASCULINE, as

<i>Un opera,</i>	an opera.
<i>Un sofa,</i>	a sofa.
<i>Le sac,</i> (pa. <i>sak</i>)	the bag.
<i>Un franc,</i> (pr. <i>fran</i>)	ten-pence.
<i>Le temps,*</i> (pr. <i>tan</i>)	the weather.
<i>Un hareng,†</i> (pr. <i>a-ran</i>)	a herring.
<i>Un canard,‡</i> (pr. <i>ka-nar</i>)	a duck.

126. *b*. All nouns ending in (*b*) are MASCULINE, as

<i>Le radoub,</i>	the refitting of a ship.
<i>Le rob,</i>	juice of fruit boiled.

127. *c*. All nouns ending in (*c*) sounding or not like a *k*, are MASCULINE, as

<i>Un roc,</i> (pr. <i>rok</i>)	a rock.
<i>Un soc,</i> (pr. <i>sok</i>)	a ploughshare.
<i>Du tabac,§</i> (pr. <i>taba</i>)	some tobacco.

128. *d*. All nouns ending in (*d*) are MASCULINE, as

<i>Le bord,†</i> (pr. <i>bor</i>)	the bank.
<i>Le canard,†</i> (pr. <i>ka-nar</i>)	the duck.
<i>Le brouillard,†</i> (pr. <i>brou-liar</i>)	the fog.

* *Temps* (pr. *tan*) masculine termination sounding in the last syllable *a* and *n*.

† *e* followed *m* or *n*, is pronounced like *a*, therefore *temps*, pr. *tan*, *hareng*, pr. *aran*.

‡ 129. Also masculine, because you hear the sound of the *r*. See No. 159.

§ Masculine termination, see No. 125.

130. *e*. There are 5,500 nouns ending in (*e*) short, all

FEMININE, as

<i>La ville,</i>	the city.
<i>Les villes,*</i>	the cities.
<i>La rivière,</i>	the river.
<i>Les rivières,*</i>	the rivers.

131. *Except* all nouns ending in *cle, cre, ge, ice, ile, me, tère, tre, ste, toire*, and about 250 nouns ending in (*e*) short, which are MASCULINE. See Du Gué on the genders, where all these exceptions are given.

132. (*é*) sharp. All nouns ending in (*é*) sharp, or if the termination is pronounced *é*, they are MASCULINE, as

<i>Le caffè,</i>	the coffee.
<i>Le blé,</i>	the corn.
<i>Un prunier, (pr. prunié)</i>	a plum tree.
<i>Un verger, (pr. verjé)</i>	an orchard.
<i>Un dez, (pr. dé)</i>	a thimble.

133. *Except* when the (*é*) sharp is immediately preceded by a (*t*) it is a FEMININE termination, as

<i>La sévérité,</i> severity.	<i>La rotondité,</i> roundness.
<i>La bonté,</i> kindness.	

134. However these eight are masculine—

Le bénédicté, un arrêté, un comité, un comté, un côté, un été, un pâté, un traité.

135. *tié*. All nouns ending in (*tié*) are FEMININE.

La pitié, pity. *L'amitié,* friendship.

136. *ée*. All nouns in (*ée*) are FEMININE, as

Une poupée, a doll. *Un coudée,* a brass.

137. *Except* these six words, which are MASCULINE,

Un athée, un pigmée, un caducée, un hyménée, un mausolée, un trophée.

138. *ie*. All nouns in (*ie*) are FEMININE, as

<i>La scie,</i> the saw.	<i>La mie,</i> the crumb.
<i>La vie,</i> the life.	<i>Les mies,</i> the crumbs.

139. *Except* these five words, which are MASCULINE,

Le foie, le génie, un incendie, le messie, un parapluie.

* When the *s* is the mark of the plural, it is not a MASCULINE termination, and the *s* is not to be recognised.

140. *f*. All nouns in (*f*) are MASCULINE, as

Le cerf,* the stag. *Le serf*,* the slave.

141. *Except* three words, which are *feminine*,

La clef, la nef, la soif.

142. *g*. All nouns ending in (*g*) are MASCULINE, as

Le sang,† the blood. *Le hareng*,† herring.
Le joug, the yoke. *Les harengs*, herrings.

143. *i*. All nouns ending in (*i*) no matter by what consonant it may be followed, are MASCULINE, as

Un défi, a challenge. *Un habit*, a coat.
Un lit, a bed. *Des habits*, coats.

144. *oi*. All nouns ending in (*oi* sounding *wa*) are MASCULINE, no matter by what consonant they may be followed.

Le bois, the wood, *Le poids*, (*pr pwa*) the weight.
Un pois, a pea, *Un doigt*, (*pr dwa*) finger.

145. *l*. All nouns ending in (*l*) are MASCULINE, as

Le bail, the lease. *Le travail*, the work.

146. *m & n*. All nouns ending in (*m* or *n*) no matter by what consonant they may be followed, are MASCULINE, as

Le nom, ‡ the name. *Le parfum*, the perfume.
Les noms, the names. *Le vin*, the wine.
Le pain, the bread. *Champ*, (*pr shan*) field.

Except three words, which are *feminine*.

La faim, la fin, and la main.

* These words by their sound must be a *masculine* termination, because you hear the *r*. See No. 161.

† Also masculine by the sound. See Nos. 125.

‡ *m* preceded by a vowel, is pronounced like an *n*.

147. *yon*. All nouns ending in (*yon*) having (*y*) before *on*, are MASCULINE, as

Le crayon, the pencil. *Le rayon*, the rag.

- 148. ion.** All nouns ending in (*ion*) are FEMININE, as

La nation, the nation, *La passion*, the passion.

- 149. Except these eleven, which are *masculine*.**

*L'ardillon, le bastion, le camion, le gabion, le galion,
le lion, le lampion, le million, le pion, le septentrion, le talion.*

- 150. *sson* and *son*.** All nouns ending in (*sson* or *son*) (*s* hard) are **MASCULINE**, as

Le buisson, the bush. *Le poinçon*, the bodkin.

151. *Except* these six, which are *feminine*.

La boisson, la chanson, la moisson, la façon, la leçon, la rançon.

152. *son.* All nouns ending in *son* (*the s having the sound of z,*) are FEMININE, as

La maison, the house. *La raison*, the reason.

- 153. Except these five, which are masculine.**

Le gazon, le grison, l'horison, l'oison, le poison, le tison.

154. *o*. All nouns ending in (*o*, or *sounding ô*), no matter what consonant may follow, are MASCULINE,

Un écho, *an echo.*

Un pavot, (pr. pavo) a poppy.

Un château, (pr. sha-tô) a castle.

Des chapeaux, (pr. sha-pó) hats.

155. *Except* these three, which are *feminine*—

L'eau, la peau, la surpeau.

- 156. *p*.** All nouns ending in (*p*) are **MASCULINE**, as

*Le champ,** the field. *Le galop,†* the galop.

* Also *masculine* by the sound. See No. 146.

† Also *masculine* by the sound. See No. 154.

157. *q*. Nouns ending in (*q*) are all MASCULINE.

Cinq, (pr. *sink*) five.
Coq, (pr. *kok*) cock.

158. *r*. All nouns ending in (*r*) sounded or not, no matter by what consonant they may be followed, are masculine.

L'air,* the air. *Le fer*,* the iron.
Le désir, the desire. *Le bord*, the bank.
Le canard, the duck *Un fort*, a fort.
Le jour,* the day. *Le bonheur*,† the happiness.
Le prunier,‡ the plum-tree. *Le verger*,‡ the orchard.

159. *s*. All nouns ending in (*s*) are MASCULINE, as

Le bras,§ (pr. *bra*) the arm.
Le bois,§ (pr. *boa*) the wood.
Un souris,|| (pr. *souri*) a smile.

160. Except these four, which are *feminine*—

La brebis, *une fois*, *une vis*, *une souris*, (a mouse.)

161. *t*. All nouns ending in (*t*) are MASCULINE, as

Un plat,§ a dish. *Diamant*,|| a diamond.

162. Except these seven, which are all *feminine*—

Une dot, *une forêt*,¶ (a forest), *une dent*, *une surdent*, *une part*, *la nuit*, *la mort*.

* 163. Except these seven words, which are *feminine*—

La chair, *la mer*, *une cuiller*, *la mort*, *une part*, *la cour*, *la tour*.

† 164. There are 1200 nouns ending in *eur* all MASCULINE except 65 which are feminine.—See *Du Gué on Genders*.

‡ 165. See No. 132. Words ending in *ier*, *ger*, the *r* is not to be pronounced, but the *é* is pronounced sharp, therefore must be a masculine termination.

§ Also masculine by the sound. See No. 125.

|| Also masculine by the sound. See No. 143. .

¶ *Forêt*, masculine, when it signifies a gimlet.

166. *u*. All nouns ending in (*u*) are MASCULINE, as

Le jeu, the game. *Les jeux*, games.
Le caillou, flint stone. *Les cailloux*, flint stones.
Le chapeau,* hat. *Les chapeaux*, hats.

167. Except these six, which are feminine—

La vertu, *la tribu*, *la glu*, *l'eau*,† *la peau*,† *la surpeau*.†

168. *x* or *z*. All nouns ending in (*x* or *z*) are all MASCULINE, as

Le flux, high water. *Le choix*,‡ choice.
Le nez,§ the nose. *Le dez*,§ the tumbler.

169. Except these nine, which are feminine—

La croix, *la chaux*, *la faux* or *faulx*, *la noix*, *la paix*, *une perdrix*, *la poix*, *la toux*, *la voix*.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

The genders were considered the greatest difficulty in the French language; what do you think of them now? I think they have now become very simple, because if I learn from 125 to 171 rules, I can scarcely make a mistake in the genders. Can you know the genders by the sound? Yes; by the rules 123 and 124, you can know the gender of the noun at once; all the exceptions are given from No. 125 to 169. Here the greatest proof I can give: the French themselves know the gender of the noun by the ear, more than any thing else. SICARD says in his Grammar, "place *LE* or *LA* before the noun, the *ear* will direct you almost invariably." But this rule is only available to Frenchmen.

* Also masculine by the sound. See No. 154.

† See No. 155.

‡ Also masculine termination by the sound. See No. 144.

§ Also masculine termination by the sound. See No. 132.

SEVENTH LESSON.

ON NUMBERS.

FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

170. General rule :—*The plural of substantives and adjectives is formed by adding an *s*, as

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Le jardin</i> , the garden.	<i>Les jardins</i> , the gardens.
<i>La maison</i> , the house.	<i>Les maisons</i> , the houses.
<i>L'enfant</i> , the child.	<i>Les enfants</i> ,† the children.
<i>L'aïeul</i> ,‡ the grandfather.	<i>Les aïeuls</i> , the grandfathers.
<i>Le bis-aïeul</i> , the great grandfather.	<i>Les bis-aïeuls</i> , the great grandfathers.

SECONDLY.

171. Substantives and adjectives ending in *s*, *x*, *z*, do not change ; as

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Le fils</i> , the son.	<i>Les fils</i> , the sons.
<i>La voix</i> , the voice.	<i>Les voix</i> , the voices.
<i>Le nez</i> , the nose.	<i>Les nez</i> , the noses.

THIRDLY.

172. Substantives and adjectives ending in *u* pure, (i.e. *u* preceded by a vowel) take *x* in the plural, as

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Le cheveu</i> , the hair.	<i>Les cheveux</i> , the hairs.
<i>Le vaisseau</i> , the vessel.	<i>Les vaisseaux</i> , the vessels.
<i>Le genou</i> , the knee.	<i>Les genoux</i> , the knees.

* 173. *Numéro* takes no *s* in the plural.

† 174. However substantives or adjectives of more than one syllable ending in *nt*, may change the *t* into *s* for the plural, as *des enfans*, children; *des savans*, learned men.

‡ 175. *Aïeul*, makes also *aïeux* in the plural, but then it signifies (ancestors).

176. *Except* the following, which take an *s* in the plural—

<i>bambou,</i>	bamboo.	<i>fou,</i>	fool.
<i>bijou,</i>	jewel.	<i>licou,</i>	halter.
<i>bleu,</i>	blue.	<i>loup-garou,</i>	an unsociable man.
<i>cou,</i>	neck.	<i>matou,</i>	a large cat.
<i>coucou,</i>	cookoo.	<i>mou,</i>	soft.
<i>clou,</i>	nail.	<i>sou,</i>	penny.
<i>écrou,</i>	a nut.	<i>trou,</i>	hole.
<i>filou,</i>	pickpocket.	<i>verrou,</i>	a bolt.

FOURTHLY.

177. Substantives and adjectives ending in *al* or *ail* change that termination into *aux*, as

Singular.		Plural.	
<i>Le mal,</i>	the pain.	<i>Les maux,</i>	the pains.
<i>Le cheval,</i>	the horse.	<i>Les chevaux,</i>	the horses.
<i>Le corail,</i>	the coral.	<i>Les coraux,</i>	the corals.
<i>Le travail,*</i>	the labour.	<i>Les travaux,</i>	the labours.
<i>Le bail,</i>	the lease.	<i>Les baux,</i>	the leases.

178. *Except*

<i>Le bétail,</i>	the cattle.	<i>Les bestiaux,</i>	the cattle.
<i>L'ail,</i>	garlick.	<i>Les aulx,</i>	garlick.

179. And the following take an *s* in their plural

<i>attirail,</i>	apparatus.	<i>gouvernail,</i>	a helm.
<i>bal,</i>	a ball.	<i>mail,</i>	a mall.
<i>bercail,</i>	sheepfold.	<i>pal,</i>	pale.
<i>bocal,</i>	a jug.	<i>poitrail,</i>	breast of a horse.
<i>cal,</i>	hard skin.	<i>portail,</i>	front gate of a
<i>carnaval,</i>	carnival.		church.
<i>détail,</i>	particulars.	<i>régail,</i>	a noble treat.
<i>épouvantail,</i>	a scarecrow.	<i>sérail,</i>	seraglio.
<i>éventail,</i>	a fan.	<i>serval,</i>	a foreign fox.

* 180. *Travail*, signifying the work of a minister with the king, or signifying a machine in which wicked horses are put to be shod or cleaned, takes an *s* in the plural.

FIFTHLY.

181. The two following substantives make their plural thus—

Singular.	Plural.
<i>le ciel</i> ,* heaven.	<i>les cieux</i> , the heavens.
<i>l'œil</i> ,† the eye.	<i>les yeux</i> , the eyes.

182. When a compound noun is formed of a noun and an adjective both take the mark of the plural, as

<i>Un gentil-homme</i> , a gentleman.	<i>Des gentils-hommes</i> , gentlemen.
<i>Un cerf-volant</i> , a paper kite.	<i>Des cerfs-volans</i> , paper kites.

183. Those formed of a preposition and a noun, or of a verb and a noun, the noun only takes the mark of the plural, as

<i>Un tire-bouchon</i> , corkscrew.	<i>Des tire-bouchons</i> , corkscrews.
<i>Un avant-coureur</i> , a fore-runner.	<i>Des avant-coureurs</i> , fore-runners.
<i>Un cure-dent</i> , a tooth-picker.	<i>Des cure-dents</i> , tooth-pickers.

184. Those formed of two nouns united by a preposition, the first only takes the mark of the plural, as

<i>Un ciel-de-lit</i> , a tester.	<i>Des ciels-de-lit</i> , testers.
<i>Un jet-d'eau</i> , a water-spout.	<i>Des jets-d'eau</i> , water-spouts.

* 185. However, we say in painting in the plural, *les ciels*, but we mean only the air, the clouds, not the heavens; and also in speaking of a bed, *les ciels de ces lits* not *les cieux*.

† 186. When *œil* is taken figuratively, it takes an *s* in the plural; as *Des œils de bœuf*, oval windows. *Voyez les œils de cette plante*, see the buds of that plant.

187. If the substantive is composed of a verb and an adverb, this compound noun will be invariable, as

Un passe-partout,
master-key.

Des passe-partout,
master-keys.

188. Proper names do not take the mark of the plural when they are only employed to show the name of one or many individuals, as

Les trois Horace vainqui-
rent les trois Curiace,

The three Horatii con-
quered the three Curatii.

Les Corneille et les Racine
ont illustré la scène Fran-
çaise,

The Corneille and the
Racine have illustrated
the French scene.

Les deux Corneille sont
nés à Rouen,

The two Corneille were
born at Rouen.

189. But they take the mark of the plural when they are employed as common names, as

La France a ses Cicérons, ses Virgiles, that is to say, men like Cicero, like Virgil. We say, *des Catons*, signifying wise men; *des Nérons*, signifying wicked men; *des Harpignons*, signifying misers.

190. Nouns of virtues and vices, *la charité, la haine, la foi, l'orgueil, &c.* so far only as they express habits; for when they express acts, they are used in the plural; as *faire des charités*.

Nouns of metals; as, *de l'or, du cuivre, de l'argent, du plomb, &c.* have no plural.

191. Adverbs used as substantives are invariable, as

Les si, les mais, les car, The if, the but, the
les donc, abondent dans les for, the then, abound
plaidoyers. in lawsuits.

Plusieurs peu font un Many little make a great
beaucoup.—(Florian.) deal.

Les quand, les qui, les quoi, The when, the who,
pleuvent de tous côtés.— the what, abound on
 (Voltaire.) every side.

192. See adjectives of number for their plural.

193. Adjectives and verbs which are used substantively have no plural ; as

Le beau,	l'agréable,	le boire,
Le dormir,	l'utile,	le manger.

194. Latin nouns* adopted into the French language take an *s* in the plural ; as

un écho,	des échos.	un factum,	des factums.
un duo,	des duos.	un infolio,	des infolios.
un trio,	des trios.	un bravo,	des bravos.

—(Boniface.)

195. And the following have no plural—

absinte,	faim,	miel,	renommée,
artillerie,	fiel,	naturel,	salut,
attirail,	fuite,	noblesse,	sang,
bonheur,	fumée,	ouïe,	sommeil,
courroux,	gloire,	odorat,	soif,
disette,	goût,	pauvreté,	total,
enfance,	honte,	pourpre,	toucher,
estime,	jeunesse,	prochain,	vieillesse,
encens,	lait,	repos,	virilité,
eucharistie,	mollesse,	réputation,	vue.

* 196. Indeed the less exceptions there are the better ; thus words adopted in the French language as substantives, take in the plural an *s*, as *des macaronis, des quiproquos, des lazis, des ladys, des tilburys, des alguezils, &c.*—(Domergue.)

197. The following have no singular—

accordailles,	catacombes,	fiançailles,	nippes,
alpes,	ciseaux,	funérailles,	obsèques,
annales,	confins,	fronts,	pénates,
ancêtres,	confitures,	frais,	pincés,
aguets (être aux),	décombres,	gallions,	pincettes,
armoires,	délices,	gens,	pleurs,
arrérages,	dépens,	hardes,	proches,
arrêtes,	écrouelles,	hémorroïdes	prémices,
assises,	émondés,	limites,	représailles,
atours,	entraves,	mânes,	rets,
bâtisses,	entrailles,	matériaux,	rogations,
bésicles,	entrefaites,	mœurs,	ténèbres,
broussailles,	étrivières,	mouchettes,	vergettes,
calendres,	épousailles,	munitions,	vivres.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

How do you form the plural of nouns and adjectives? 1st. Generally by adding an (*s*). 2d. Those ending in (*s*, *x*, or *z*,) do not change. 3d. Those ending in (*u*) take an (*x*). 4th. Those ending in (*al* or *ail*) change those terminations in (*aux*). Are there any exceptions? Yes, but they are all given after each rule. Are there any more rules necessary to know? Yes, from No. 183 to 196, but they are not so often used. Proper names, do they take the mark of the plural? Not always; the rules are given No. 188 and 189. Latin nouns adopted in the French language, do they take the mark of the plural? They do; see No. 194 and 196.

EIGHTH LESSON.

ON ADJECTIVES.

197. An ADJECTIVE OR QUALIFICATIVE* is a word which is added to a noun to express its quality, or to modify the object which it designs ; as *bon*, good ; *heureux*, happy ; *grand*, tall ; *sage*, wise ; *hardi*, bold.

The words *sage*, wise ; *hardi*, bold ; used alone present to the mind but a vague and indefinite idea of something wise, or bold ; but if we say, a wise man, a bold man, the words wise and bold, which are adjectives, specify a quality of the man of whom we speak.

198. Adjectives are generally placed after their substantives, (*for it is necessary to know an object before it can be qualified,*) they agree with them in gender, number, case, and form their plural in the same manner as the noun ; see p. 40, No. 170, &c.

<i>La femme aimable,</i>	The amiable woman.
<i>Les femmes aimables,</i>	The amiable women.
<i>L'enfant prudent,</i>	The prudent child.
<i>Les enfants prudents,†</i>	The prudent children.

* QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

How do you know that a word is an adjective ? When it will make sense with the addition of one of the substantives *personne*, (person) : or *chose* (thing) ; thus, to ascertain if *agréable*, *facile*, be adjectives, we join them to the substantive, as *personne agréable*, (agreeable person) ; *chose facile*, (easy thing) ; we know that they are adjectives, because they make sense with the addition of the substantive.

† See No. 174.

199. *Except* the following, which are placed *BEFORE* their substantives :—

ancien	gros	profond	vieil
beau	grosse	profonde	vieille
bel	haut	riche	vieux
belle	haute	saint	vilain
bon	jeune	sainte	vilaine
bonne	joli	semi	vrai
brave	jolie	seul	vraie
certain	juste	seule	le premier†
certaine	long	sot	la première
cher*	longue	sotte	un premier
chère*	mauvais	tel	une première
chétif	mauvaise	telle	mon premier
chétive	meilleur	tout	ma première
demi	meilleure	toute	le second
digne	mi	triple	le troisième
double	moindre	vaillant	&c. &c.
grand	petit	vaillante	
grande	petite	véritable	

200. Some adjectives are placed before or after their substantives, therefore present no difficulty. However, the following adjectives differ in their significations accordingly as they are placed :—

<i>Un honnête homme</i> , an honest man.	<i>Un homme honnête</i> , a civil man.
<i>Un brave homme</i> , an honest man.	<i>Un homme brave</i> , a courageous man.
<i>Un gentil homme</i> , a man nobly descended.	<i>Un homme gentil</i> , a genteel man.

* *Cher* is only placed before the noun when it denotes affection.

† Ordinal Adjectives are only placed before the noun, when they are preceded by the article or adjective possessive. See lesson on Ordinal Adjectives.

<i>Un pauvre homme</i> , a man without genius.	<i>Un homme pauvre</i> , a poor man.
<i>Un plaisant homme</i> , a ridiculous fellow.	<i>Un homme plaisant</i> , a facetious man.
<i>Un grand homme</i> , a great man.	<i>Un homme grand</i> , a tall man.
<i>Un furieux animal</i> , a huge creature.	<i>Un animal furieux</i> , a fierce creature.
<i>Un vilain homme</i> , a disagreeable man.	<i>Un homme vilain</i> , a niggardly fellow.
<i>Une certaine nouvelle</i> , news which requires confirmation.	<i>Une nouvelle certaine</i> , news to be depended upon.
<i>Un galant homme</i> , a complete gentleman.	<i>Un homme galant</i> , a lady's man.
<i>Avoir le grand air</i> , to copy after the great folk.	<i>Avoir l'air grand</i> , to look grand.

201. The adjectives *nu*, *demi*, *semi*,* *supposé*, *entendu*, *ouï*, *passé*, *vu*, and *compris*, placed before the substantive, do not agree with it; but, placed after, they do agree with it; as,

Do not agree with the substantive.	Agree with the substantive.
<i>Nu-pieds</i> , bare feet.	<i>Pieds-nus</i> , bare feet.
<i>Demi-heure</i> , half hour.	<i>Une heure et demie</i> .† an hour and half.
<i>Passé six heures</i> , past six o'clock.	<i>Six heures passées</i> , past six o'clock.
<i>Ouï les témoins</i> , the witness heard.	<i>Les parties ouïes</i> , the witness heard.

* 202. *Semi* (Latin word), which signifies half, is invariable, and always placed before the substantive — *semi-double*, *semi-preuve*, &c.

† 203. *Demi* agrees in gender, but not in number, as, *six heures et demie*, because there is only one half hour; but when *demi* is taken substantively, it will take the marks of the plural; as,

Cette pendule sonne les heures, les demies, et les quarts.

This clock strikes the hours, half-hours, and quarters.

204. *Feu*, late or deceased, placed before the definite article, or adjective possessive, does not change; but when placed after, it agrees with the substantive; as,

Does not agree with the substantive.

Feu la reine,
the late queen.

Feu ma mère,
my deceased mother.

Feu mon oncle,
my deceased uncle.

Agrees with the substantive.

La feuë reine,
the late queen.

Ma feuë mère,
my deceased mother.

Mes feuë oncles,
my deceased uncles.

205. Adjectives, employed adverbially, are always invariable; as,

*Cette veste a couté cher,** This waistcoat has cost much.

*Ces fleurs sentent bon,** These flowers have a good fragrance.

Elle a vendu cher sa vie,* She has sold her life dearly.

Mettre bas les armes,* To lay down the arms.

*Cette robe monte trop haut,** This gown is too high.

206. When the first adjective is modified by a second adjective, both are invariable; as,

Des cheveux châtain-clair, Light auburn hair.

Des soies bleu-foncé, Dark blue silk.

207. When an adjective agrees with more than one substantive, it must be put in the plural; as,

Le roi et le berger sont égaux The king and the shepherd are
après la mort, equal after death.

Le cidre et le vin sont bons, The cider and wine are good.

* The French Academy.

208. If the substantives be of different genders, the adjectives must be masculine.*

<i>Ma mère et mon père sont contents,†</i>	My mother and father are pleased.
<i>La femme et l'homme sont satisfaits,</i>	The woman and man are satisfied.

209. However, if the last substantive be feminine, and followed immediately by the adjective, the adjective must be feminine ; as,

<i>Il avait les yeux et la bouche ouverte,</i>	He had his eyes and mouth open.
<i>Il trouva les étangs et les rivières glacées,</i>	He found the ponds and the rivers frozen.
<i>Il faut un courage ou une prudence étonnante,</i>	It is necessary to have an astonishing or prudent courage.
<i>Il faut des talens ou une assiduité constante pour réussir dans cette affaire,</i>	You must have talents, or a constant perseverance to succeed in this business.

210. The adjective placed before *gens*, is feminine ; and masculine, when placed after it—

Feminine.	Masculine.
<i>Les vieilles gens,</i> the old people.	<i>Les gens âgés,</i> the old people.

PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES.

211. Adjectives follow the same rule as substantives in forming their plural. See No. 170, &c.

* In this case, the ear and the taste require that the substantive masculine should be expressed the last.

† See No. 174.

Except the following, which take an s for their plural ; as

amical	diamétral	libéral	pastoral
austral	expérimental	lingual	pascal
automnal	fatal	littéral	spécial
bénéficial	filial	lustral	total
boréal	frugal	matinal	trivial
cérémonial	final	médial	théâtral
colossal	glacial	nasal	vénal
conjugal	initial	natal	virginal
claustral	jovial	naval	
dental	labial	nuptial	

DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

There are three degrees of comparison—the positive, the comparative, and the superlative.

212. Adjectives are all compared thus:—

Positive,	<i>sage</i>	wise.
Comparative relative,	<i>plus sage,</i>	more wise.
———— of equality.	<i>aussi sage,</i>	as wise.
———— of inferiority,	<i>moins sage,</i>	less wise.
Superlative relative,	<i>le plus sage,</i>	the wisest.
———— absolute,	<i>très, fort, bien, infiniment, extrême-ment, &c. sage,</i>	very wise.

Observe.—The comparative adjective takes (*que*) after, and the superlative (*de*). Examples—

<i>Je suis plus sage que lui,</i>	I am more wise than he.
<i>Il est aussi charmant qu' elle,</i>	He is as amiable as she.
<i>Vous serez moins aimable qu' eux,</i>	You will be less amiable than they.
<i>Il était le plus sage de sa famille,</i>	He was the wisest of his family.
<i>Vous serez fort généreux de le lui donner,</i>	You will be very generous to give it to him.

213. *Except the following :—*

Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
<i>bon</i> , good	<i>meilleur</i> , better	<i>le meilleur</i> , or <i>très bon</i> , [†] best
<i>mauvais</i> , bad*	<i>pire</i> , worse	<i>le pire</i> , the worst
<i>petit</i> , little [†]	<i>moindre</i> , less	<i>le moindre</i> , the least

214. Adverbs form their degrees of comparison in the same manner as adjectives.

Except the following—

Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
<i>bien</i> , well	<i>mieux</i> , better	<i>le mieux</i> , the best
<i>mal</i> , ill §	<i>pis</i> , worse	<i>le pis</i> , worst
<i>peu</i> , little	<i>moins</i> , less	<i>le moins</i> , the least
<i>beaucoup</i> , much	<i>plus</i> or <i>davantage</i> , more	<i>le plus</i> , the most
<i>bientôt</i> , soon	<i>plutôt</i> , sooner	<i>le plutôt</i> , the soonest

215. Adverbs of comparison are repeated before every word which they modify ; as

Il est si sage, si bon, qu'il n'a pas son pareil. (French Academy.) He is so wise, and so good, that there is not his equal.

Plus on lit Racine plus on l'admire. (d'Olivet.) The more we read Racine, the more we admire him.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPIL.

Where do you place the adjective in French? After the substantive? Is it always so? No; 38 are placed before they are all given, No. 199. Is there any adjective according to its place, whose signification is different? Yes; they are all given No. 200. Does the adjective always agree with its noun? No; see Nos. 201, 202, &c.

* Or regular, *mauvais*, *plus mauvais* *le plus mauvais*

† Or regular, *petit* *plus petit* *le plus petit*

‡ *Très bon*, extremely good, is the superlative absolute.

§ Or regular, *mal* *plus mal* *le plus mal*.

|| The adverb *plus* must be repeated before every adjective when the comparison denotes superiority.

NINTH LESSON.

FORMATION OF THE FEMININE IN ADJECTIVES.

216. GENERAL RULE: the feminine is formed by adding an *e* short ; as,

Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>grand,</i>	<i>grande,</i>	great.
<i>aisé,</i>	<i>aisée,</i>	easy.
<i>joli,</i>	<i>jolie,</i>	pretty.

SECONDLY.

217. Adjectives ending in *e* mute do not change ; as

Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>sage,</i>	<i>sage,</i>	wise.
<i>aimable,</i>	<i>aimable,</i>	amiable.
<i>honnête,</i>	<i>honnête</i>	honest.

THIRDLY.

218. Adjectives ending in *eur* and *eux*, change the *r* and *x* into *se* ; as

Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>railleur,</i>	<i>railleuse,</i>	jeering.
<i>heureux,</i>	<i>heureuse,</i>	happy.

219. Except the following, which follow the general rule—

<i>antérieur,</i>	anterior.	<i>mineur,</i>	minor.
<i>citérieur,</i>	hither.	<i>meilleur,</i>	better.
<i>extérieur,</i>	exterior.	<i>postérieur,</i>	posterior.
<i>inférieur,</i>	inferior.	<i>prieur,</i>	prior.
<i>intérieur,</i>	interior.	<i>supérieur,</i>	superior.
<i>majeur,</i>	major.	<i>ultérieur,</i>	ulterior.

FOURTHLY.

220. Adjectives ending in *f* change that termination into *ve* ; as

Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>naïf,</i>	<i>naïve,</i>	natural.
<i>vif,</i>	<i>vive,</i>	quick.
<i>neuf,</i>	<i>neuve,</i>	new.

FIFTHLY.

221. Adjectives ending in *al* or *il*, take an *e* short ; as—

Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>animal,</i>	<i>animale,</i>	animal.
<i>puéril,</i>	<i>puérile,</i>	childish.

222. *Except gentil*, genteel ; *pareil*, like ; *vermeil*, reddish ; and *vieil*, old ; which take *le* in their feminine.

223. Adjectives ending in *el*, *ol*, *ul*, take *le* in their feminine,

Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>cruel,</i>	<i>cruelle,</i>	cruel.
<i>fol,</i>	<i>folle,</i>	foolish.
<i>nul,</i>	<i>nulle,</i>	void.

SIXTHLY.

224. Adjectives ending in *on*, *ien*, *et*, and *ot*, double the consonant before *e* mute ; as

Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>bon,</i>	<i>bonne,</i>	good.
<i>chrétien,</i>	<i>chrétienne,</i>	christian.
<i>net,</i>	<i>nette,</i>	clean.
<i>sot,</i>	<i>sotte,</i>	silly.

225. *Except*

<i>blet</i> ,	over-ripe.	<i>sécret</i> ,	secret.
<i>complet</i> ,	complete.	<i>bigot</i> ,	bigotted.
<i>concret</i> ,	concrete.	<i>cagot</i> ,	hypocritical.
<i>discret</i> ,	discreet.	<i>dévot</i> ,	devout.
<i>inquiet</i> ,	uneasy.	<i>idiot</i> ,	silly.
<i>prêt</i> ,	ready.		

which follow the general rule. See No. 216.

SEVENTHLY.

226. Adjectives ending in *c*, change that termination into *que* ; as

Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>caduc</i> ,	<i>caduque</i> ,	decaying.
<i>public</i> ,	<i>publique</i> ,	public.

227. *Except* the following :—

<i>Grec</i> ,	<i>Grecque</i> ,	Greek
<i>blanc</i> ,	<i>blanche</i> ,	white.
<i>franc</i> ,	<i>franche</i> ,	frank.
<i>sec</i> ,	<i>sèche</i> ,	dry.

228. The following have two masculines :—

Masculine.		Feminine.	
before a consonant.	before a vowel or <i>h</i> mute.		
<i>nouveau</i> ,*	<i>nouvel</i> ,†	<i>nouvelle</i> ,	new.
<i>beau</i> ,*	<i>bel</i> ,†	<i>belle</i> ,	handsome.
<i>fou</i> ,†	<i>fol</i> ,†	<i>folle</i> ,	foolish,
<i>mou</i> ,†	<i>mol</i> ,†	<i>molle</i> ,	soft.
<i>vieux</i> ,	<i>vieil</i> ,†	<i>vieille</i> ,	old.

* See No. 172 for the plural.

† See No. 176 for the plural.

‡ Used only before substantives singular beginning with a vowel or silent *h*.

229. The following 18 make their feminine thus—

Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>absous,</i>	<i>absoute,</i>	absolved.
<i>bas,</i>	<i>basse,</i>	low.
<i>bénin,</i>	<i>bénigne,</i>	benign.
<i>dissous,</i>	<i>dissoute,</i>	dissolved.
<i>doux,</i>	<i>douce,</i>	sweet.
<i>épais,</i>	<i>épaisse,</i>	thick.
<i>exprès,</i>	<i>expresse,</i>	express.
<i>faux,</i>	<i>fausse,</i>	false.
<i>favori,</i>	<i>favorite,</i>	favourite.
<i>frais,</i>	<i>fraîche,</i>	fresh.
<i>gras,</i>	<i>grasse,</i>	fat.
<i>gros,</i>	<i>grosse,</i>	big.
<i>jaloux,</i>	<i>jalouse,</i>	jealous.
<i>las,</i>	<i>lasse,</i>	tired.
<i>long,</i>	<i>longue,</i>	long.
<i>malin,</i>	<i>maligne,</i>	malignant.
<i>oblong,</i>	<i>oblongue,</i>	oblong.
<i>roux,</i>	<i>rousse,</i>	reddish.
<i>tiers,</i>	<i>tierce,</i>	the third.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

How do you form the feminine of adjectives? Generally by adding an (e) short. 2ndly. Those ending in (e) short do not change. 3rdly. Those ending in EUR and EUX change (u and x) into (se). See for exceptions No. 219. 4thly. Those ending in (f) change it into ve. 5thly. Those ending in (AL and IL) take e. 6thly. Those ending in (EL, OL, UL) take le. 7thly. Those ending in (ON, IEN, ET and OT) take ne and te. See for exceptions, No. 225. 8thly. Those ending in (c) change it into que. See No. 227. What do you remark on nouveau, beau, fou, mou, vieux? They have two masculines. See No. 228. Do those 18 adjectives in No. 229 follow any rule? No, they must be learned by heart.

TENTH LESSON.

ON ADJECTIVES OF NUMBERS.

There are two species—cardinal and ordinal.

CARDINAL ADJECTIVES* designate only the number of persons and things of which we speak, without showing their order or rank; they are those which answer to the question “How many?”

ORDINAL ADJECTIVES† show the order or rank of the persons and things of which we speak, answering to the question “Which of the number?”

230.

NUMBERS.

Cardinal Numbers.

1, Un,‡

2, Deux,

3, Trois,||

Ordinal Numbers.

1st, Premier, unième.§

2d, Second, or Deuxième.§

3d, Troisième.

* 231. Cardinal adjectives (*numbers*) are used instead of the ordinals. In speaking of sovereigns; as, Henri quatre; George deux, Catherine deux, Charles cinq, Sixte cinq, or Sixte-quin.

† 232. Ordinal adjectives are placed before the substantive, when they are preceded by the article definite, adjectives possessive or demonstrative; if not, they are placed after it.

Le premier livre, 1st book. *Livre premier*, 1st book.

La seconde page, 2d page. *Page seconde*, 2d page.

Le troisième jour, 3d day. *François premier*, Francis 1st.

‡ 233. The feminine of *un* is *une*, and all the other numbers are the same for both genders.

§ 234. *Unième* and *Deuxième* are only used after the cardinal adjectives, as 21st, 22d, 31st, 32d, &c.

|| 235. Ordinal adjectives are formed from cardinal adjectives; first, by changing the *e* mute into *ième*; as, *quatre*, *quatrième*; *onze*, *onzième*. Secondly, by adding *ième* to those which end in a consonant; *trois*, *troisième*; *sept*, *septième*.

236. *Except cinq*, which makes *cinquième*; *neuf*, *neuvième*; and *premier*, and *second*. The ordinal adjectives take an *s* in the plural; as, *les premiers*, *les seconds*, *les troisièmes*, &c.

Cardinal Numbers.	Ordinal Numbers.
4, Quatre,	4th, Quatrième.
5, Cinq.	5th, Cinquième.
6, Six.	6th, Sixième.
7, Sept.	7th, Septième.
8, Huit.	8th, Huitième.
9, Neuf.	9th, Neuvième.
10, Dix.	10th, Dixième.
11, Onze.*	11th, Onzième.*
12, Douze.	12th, Douzième.
13, Treize.	13th, Treizième.
14, Quatorze.	14th, Quatorzième.
15, Quinze.	15th, Quinzième.
16, Seize.	16th, Seizième.
17, Dix-sept.	17th, Dix-septième.
18, Dix-huit.	18th, Dix-huitième.
19, Dix-neuf.	19th, Dix-neuvième.
20, Vingt.†	20th, Vingtième.
21, Vingt-et-un.‡	21st, Vingt-et-unième.‡

* 237. Before onze and onzième, you must not omit the vowel ; as, le onze, le onzième, la onzième. See No. 12.

† 238. *Vingt* and *cent*, in the plural, take an *s* when they are not followed by an adjective of number ; as

<i>quatre VINGTS hommes,</i>	80 men.
<i>six VINGTS vaisseaux,</i>	60 ships.
<i>deux CENTS soldats,</i>	200 soldiers.
<i>huit CENTS chevaux,</i>	800 horses, &c.

239. But *vingt* and *cent* followed by an adjective of number, do not change, as

<i>quatre VINGT DEUX hommes,</i>	82 men.
<i>six VINGT QUATRE vaisseaux,</i>	64 ships.
<i>deux CENT TROIS soldats,</i>	203 soldiers.
<i>huit CENT CINQ chevaux,</i>	805 horses, &c.

‡ 240. The *t* in *vingt* is only pronounced from 21 to 29.

‡ 241. *Et* is ONLY used before *un* after the decimal numbers *vingt*, *trente*, *quarante*, *cinquante*, &c., and in the numbers from 70 to 79, as *vingt et un chevaux* ; *le vingt et unième cheval*. Why in the first phrase (*chevaux*) in the plural, and in the

Cardinal Numbers.	Ordinal Numbers.
22, Vingt-deux.	22d, Vingt-deuxième.
23, Vingt-trois.	23d, Vingt-troisième.
24, Vingt-quatre.	24th, Vingt-quatrième.
25, Vingt-cinq.	25th, Vingt-cinquième.
26, Vingt-six.	26th, Vingt-sixième.
27, Vingt-sept.	27th, Vingt-septième.
28, Vingt-huit.	28th, Vingt-huitième.
29, Vingt-neuf.	29th, Vingt-neuvième.
30, Trente.	30th, Trentième
31, Trente-et-un.*	31st, Trente-et-unième.*
32, Trente-deux.	32d, Trente-deuxième.
33, Trente-trois.	33d, Trente-troisième.
34, Trente-quatre.	34th, Trente-quatrième.
35, Trente-cinq.	35th, Trente-cinquième.
36, Trente-six.	36th, Trente-sixième.
37, Trente-sept.	37th, Trente-septième.
38, Trente-huit.	38th, Trente-huitième.
39, Trente-neuf.	39th, Trente-neuvième.
40, Quarante.	40th, Quarantième.
41, Quarante-et-un.*	41st, Quarante-et-unième.*
42, Quarante-deux.	42d, Quarante-deuxième.
43, Quarante-trois.	43d, Quarante-troisième.
44, Quarante-quatre.	44th, Quarante-quatrième.
45, Quarante-cinq.	45th, Quarante-cinquième.
46, Quarante-six.	46th, Quarante-sixième.
47, Quarante-sept.	47th, Quarante-septième.
48, Quarante-huit.	48th, Quarante-huitième.
49, Quarante-neuf.	49th, Quarante-neuvième.
50, Cinquante.	50th, Cinquantième.
51, Cinquante-et-un.*	51st, Cinquante-et-unième.*
52, Cinquante-deux.	52d, Cinquante-deuxième.
53, Cinquante-trois.	53d, Cinquante-troisième.
54, Cinquante-quatre.	54th, Cinquante-quatrième.

second (*cheval*) singular, because the first expresses number and the second order.

* See No. 241.

Cardinal Numbers.	Ordinal Numbers.
55, Cinquante-cinq.	55th, Cinquante-cinquième.
56, Cinquante-six.	56th, Cinquante-sixième.
57, Cinquante-sept.	57th, Cinquante-septième.
58, Cinquante-huit.	58th, Cinquante-huitième.
59, Cinquante-neuf.	59th, Cinquante-neuvième.
60, Soixante.	60th, Soixantième.
61, Soixante-et-un.	61st, Soixante-et-unième.
62, Soixante-deux.	62d, Soixante-deuxième.
63, Soixante-trois.	63d, Soixante-troisième.
64, Soixante-quatre.	64th, Soixante-quatrième.
65, Soixante-cinq.	65th, Soixante-cinquième.
66, Soixante-six.	66th, Soixante-sixième.
67, Soixante-sept.	67th, Soixante-septième.
68, Soixante-huit.	68th, Soixante-huitième.
69, Soixante-neuf.	69th, Soixante-neuvième.
70, Soixante-et-dix.*	70th, Soixante-et-dixième.
71, Soixante-et-onze.	71st, Soixante-et-onzième.
72, Soixante-et-douze.	72d, Soixante-et-douzième.
73, Soixante-et-treize.	73d, Soixante-et-treizième.
74, Soixante-et-quatorze.	74th, Soixante-et-quatorzième.
75, Soixante-et-quinze.	75th, Soixante-et-quinzième.
76, Soixante-et-seize.	76th, Soixante-et-seizième.
77, Soixante-et-dix-sept.	77th, Soixante-et-dix-septième.
78, Soixante-et-dix-huit.	78th, Soixante-et-dix-huitième.
79, Soixante-et-dix-neuf.	79th, Soixante-et-dix-neuvième.
80, Quatre-vingts.†	80th, Quatre-vingtième.
81, Quatre-vingt-et-un.	81st, Quatre-vingt-et-unième.
82, Quatre-vingt-deux.	82d, Quatre-vingt-deuxième.
83, Quatre-vingt-trois.	83d, Quatre-vingt-troisième.
84, Quatre-vingt-quatre.	84th, Quatre-vingt-quatrième.

* 242. *Et* is also used from 70 to 79, and from 70th to 79th. See No. 241. (FRENCH ACADEMY.)

† 243. We have also the word *septante*, 70; *septante et un* 71; *septante deux*, 72, &c.; from the Latin (*septuaginta*).

‡ 244. We have also, *octante* 80, from the Latin (*octogenta*), but seldom used. (GATEL.)

Cardinal Numbers.	Ordinal Numbers.
85, Quatre-vingt-cinq.	85th, Quatre-vingt-cinquième.
86, Quatre-vingt-six.	86th, Quatre-vingt-sixième.
87, Quatre-vingt-sept.	87th, Quatre-vingt-septième.
88, Quatre-vingt-huit.	88th, Quatre-vingt-huitième.
89, Quatre-vingt-neuf.	89th, Quatre-vingt-neuvième.
90, Quatre-vingt-dix.*	90th, Quatre-vingt-dixième.
91, Quatre-vingt-onze.	91st, Quatre-vingt-onzième.
92, Quatre-vingt-douze.	92d, Quatre-vingt-douzième.
93, Quatre-vingt-treize.	93d, Quatre-vingt-treizième.
94, Quatre-vingt-quatorze.	94th, Quatre-vingt-quatorzième.
95, Quatre-vingt-quinze.	95th, Quatre-vingt-quinzième.
96, Quatre-vingt-seize.	96th, Quatre-vingt-seizième.
97, Quatre-vingt-dix-sept.	97th, Quatre-vingt-dix-septième.
98, Quatre-vingt-dix-huit	98th, Quatre-vingt-dix-huitième.
99, Quatre-vingt-dix-neuf	99th, Quatre-vingt-dix-neuvième.
100, Cent† (not <i>un cent</i>).	100th, Centième.
101, Cent-et-un.	101st, Cent-et-unième.
102, Cent-deux.	102d, Cent-deuxième.
103, Cent-trois.	103d, Cent-troisième.
104, Cent-quatre.	104th, Cent-quatrième.
105, Cent-cinq.	105th, Cent-cinquième.
106, Cent-six.	106th, Cent-sixième.
107, Cent-sept.	107th, Cent-septième.
108, Cent-huit.	108th, Cent-huitième.
109, Cent-neuf, &c.	109th, Cent-neuvième, &c.
130, Cent-trente.	130th, Cent-trentième.
131, Cent-trente-et-un.	131st, Cent-trente-et-unième.
140, Cent-quarante.	140th, Cent-quarantième.
141, Cent-quarante-et-un.	141st, Cent-quarante-et-unième.
200, Deux cents.	200th, Deux-centième.

* 245. We have also *nonante*, 90; *nonante et un*, 91; *nonante deux*, 92, (from the Latin *nonaginta*.) (GATEL.)

† 246. See No. 236 for its plural. The word *ONE* is omitted before *CENT* and *MILLE* in French, though expressed in English.

Cardinal Numbers.	Ordinal Numbers.
201, Deux cent-et-un.	201 st , Deux cent et unième.
202, Deux cent-deux.	202 ^d , Deux cent-deuxième.
360, Trois cent-soixante.	360 th , Trois-cent-soixantième.
1000, Mille* (not <i>un mille</i>).	1000 th , Millième.
2000, Deux mille.	2000 th , Deux-millème.
3000, Trois mille.	3000 th , Trois-millème.
1,000,000, Un million.	1,000,000 th , Millionième.
2,000,000, Deux millions.†	2,000,000 th , Deux millionième.

We have also numeral adjectives, which are called collectives.

247. NUMERAL COLLECTIVE ADJECTIVES point out a certain number of persons or things, united under a single denomination. They are always feminine ; as,

<i>une huitaine,</i>	<i>une vingtaine,</i>
<i>une neuvaine,</i>	<i>une trentaine.</i>
<i>une dizaine,</i>	<i>une quarantaine.</i>
<i>une douzaine,</i>	<i>une cinquantaine.</i>
<i>une quinzaine,</i>	<i>une soixantaine.</i>

248. *Observe*—After the collective numeral, before the following substantive, we always use the preposition *de* ; as, *une huitaine de personnes*, eight persons ; *une dizaine de jours*, ten days.

* 249. *Mille* never takes an *s*, as, *trois mille francs*, 3000 francs. In writing the date of the year, it is only *mil*, as, *l'an mil-huit cent trente et un*, 1831. When *mille* is a substantive, it takes an *s* in the plural, as, *Il y a onze milles de Dublin à Carton* ; there are 11 miles from Dublin to Carton.

† 250. Million, in the plural, always takes an *s*.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

What have you remarked on *vingt* and *cent*? They take an (s) in the plural if they are not followed by an adjective of number; see No. 238, 239. When do you use (*et*)? Only before *un* (see No. 241) and from 70 to 79, and from 70th to 79th. Does *mille* take an (s)? Never when it is an adjective; but it does when it is a substantive, see No. 249. In conversation can you say, *le deux Janvier*, *le trois février*, *le cinq mars*, &c.? Yes; but in writing it is better to use the ordinal adjective, as *le deuxième de Janvier*, *le troisième de février*, &c. Cardinal adjectives, are they used sometimes substantively? Yes; as *le huit de pique*, the eight of spade; *jouer au trente et un*, to play at thirty-one. The Cardinal Adjectives, do they take the mark of the plural? They do; as *les premiers*, *les seconds*, *les troisièmes*, &c. The Ordinal Adjectives, do they take the sign of the plural? They do not; *les quatre*, *les sept*, *les huit*. You must except *vingt*, *cent*, and *million*. The Numeral Collective Adjectives, do they take an article after them? No; only the preposition *de*, as *une douzaine de pommes*, a dozen of apples; *deux douzaines de poires*, two dozen of pears, &c.

ELEVENTH LESSON.

ON POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

251. POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES are words which, joined to a substantive, show the possession of the person or thing of which one speaks; they are always placed before the substantive, and agree with it; they are—

Singular.		Plural.	
Mas.	Fem.	Both genders.	
<i>mon</i> ,*	<i>ma</i> ,	<i>mes</i> ,	<i>my</i> .
<i>ton</i> ,*	<i>ta</i> ,	<i>tes</i> ,	<i>thy</i> .
<i>son</i> ,*	<i>sa</i> ,	<i>ses</i> ,	<i>his, her, its</i> .

* 252. *Mon*, *ton*, *son*, are used also before substantives feminine, beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, instead of *ma*, *ta*, *sa*, to prevent a bad sound; as, *mon amie*, (my friend); *ton âme*, (thy soul); *son indifférence*, (her indifference).

notre,	notre,	nous,	our.
votre,	votre,	vous,	your.
leur,	leur,	leurs,	their.

They are declined thus :

253. *Mon* is used before every substantive masculine.

Singular Masculine.

Nom. and Acc.	<i>mon père,</i>	my father
Gen. and Abl.	<i>de mon père,</i>	of my father.
Dative	<i>à mon père,</i>	to my father.

254. *Ma* is used before every substantive feminine beginning with a consonant.

Singular Feminine.

Nom. and Acc.	<i>ma mère,</i>	my mother.
Gen. and Abl.	<i>de ma mère,</i>	of my mother.
Dative	<i>à ma mère,</i>	to my mother.

255. For both genders.

Plural for both genders.

Nom. and Acc.	<i>mes</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{pères,} \\ \text{mères,} \end{array} \right\}$	my	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{fathers,} \\ \text{mothers.} \end{array} \right\}$
Gen. and Abl.	<i>de mes</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{pères,} \\ \text{mères,} \end{array} \right\}$	of my	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{fathers,} \\ \text{mothers.} \end{array} \right\}$
Dative	<i>à mes</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{pères,} \\ \text{mères,} \end{array} \right\}$	to my	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{fathers,} \\ \text{mothers.} \end{array} \right\}$

256. *Observe*, we must repeat the possessive adjectives before every substantive, when they do not qualify the same noun, as—

J'ai loué ma maison de ville, I have let my town-house,
ma ferme, mon château, et my farm, my castle, and
mes forêts, my forests.

Il m'a envoyé ses nouveaux He has sent me his new
modèles, et ses anciens ta- models, and his old
bleaux, pictures.

J'ai vu votre grand pré, et I have seen your large
vos petits jardins, meadow, and your small
gardens.

257. However, if the adjectives *qualify* the same noun, do not repeat it, as

<i>Il m'a envoyé ses nouveaux</i>	He has sent me his new
<i>et excellens modèles,</i>	and excellent patterns.
<i>J'ai vu vos beaux et vastes</i>	I have seen your fine and
<i>jardins,</i>	spacious gardens.

258. Remark.—In the following phrases (*in speaking of the members of the body*) the article is used instead of the possessive adjective.

J'ai mal à <i>la</i> tête, not	I have pain to my head, or,
(à ma tête),	I have a headache.
Il a mal à l'œil, (not à son	He has pain in the eye.
œil),	
J'ai mal aux dents,	I have a tooth-ache.
Je me suis blessé au bras,	I have hurted my arm.

ON DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES.

DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES are those which, joined to a substantive, serve to indicate the persons or things of which one speaks ; they are always placed before the substantive, and agree with it.

They are *ce, cet, cette*, this or that ; *ces*, these or those. They are declined thus—

259. *Ce* is used before every substantive masculine beginning with a consonant.

Singular Masculine.		
Nom. and Acc.	<i>ce livre,</i>	this book.
Gen. and Abl.	<i>de ce livre,</i>	of this book.
Dative,	<i>à ce livre,</i>	to this book.

260. *Cet* is only used before substantives masculine beginning with a vowel, or *h* mute.

Singular Masculine.

Nom. and Acc.	<i>cet</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{ami}, \\ \textit{homme}, \end{array} \right\}$	this or that	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{friend.} \\ \text{man.} \end{array} \right\}$
Gen. and Abl.	<i>de cet</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{ami}, \\ \textit{homme}, \end{array} \right\}$	of this or that	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{friend.} \\ \text{man.} \end{array} \right\}$
Dative	<i>à cet</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{ami}, \\ \textit{homme}, \end{array} \right\}$	to this or that	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{friend.} \\ \text{man.} \end{array} \right\}$

261. *Cette* is only used before substantives feminine beginning with a consonant, a vowel, or an *h* mute.

Singular Feminine.

Nom. and Acc.	<i>cette</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{pomme}, \\ \textit{ame}, \\ \textit{humeur}, \end{array} \right\}$	this or that	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{apple.} \\ \text{soul.} \\ \text{humour.} \end{array} \right\}$
Gen. and Abl.	<i>de cette</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{pomme}, \\ \textit{ame}, \\ \textit{humeur}, \end{array} \right\}$	of this or that	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{apple.} \\ \text{soul.} \\ \text{humour.} \end{array} \right\}$
Dative	<i>à cette</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{pomme}, \\ \textit{ame}, \\ \textit{humeur} \end{array} \right\}$	to this or that	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{apple.} \\ \text{soul.} \\ \text{humour.} \end{array} \right\}$

262. *Ces* is used before all substantives plural, masculine or feminine, beginning with a consonant, a vowel, or an *h* mute.

Plural.

Nom. and Acc.	<i>ces</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{livres}, \\ \textit{ames}, \\ \textit{hommes}, \end{array} \right\}$	these or those	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{books.} \\ \text{souls.} \\ \text{men.} \end{array} \right\}$
Gen. and Abl.	<i>de ces</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{livres}, \\ \textit{ames}, \\ \textit{hommes}, \end{array} \right\}$	of these or those	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{books.} \\ \text{souls.} \\ \text{men.} \end{array} \right\}$
Dative	<i>à ces</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{livres}, \\ \textit{ames}, \\ \textit{hommes}, \end{array} \right\}$	to these or those	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{books.} \\ \text{souls.} \\ \text{men.} \end{array} \right\}$

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

Why are *mon* (my), *ton* (thy), *son* (his), called adjectives possessive in French, and pronouns in English? Because in English they are used instead of a noun, and agree with their antecedent, therefore must be pronouns; but in French it is quite the reverse, they agree in gender, number, and case with the noun to which they are joined, for example:—It is her father, *C'est son père*; it is his mother, *c'est sa mère*. *Ce*, this or that, joined to a noun, can it be considered as a pronoun in English?—Impossible. Why?—Because it is never used instead of a noun, therefore it cannot be a pronoun; it is an adjective in all languages, as *ce livre*, this book; *cette plume*, this pen; *ces livres*, these books. When do you use (*cet*)?—Only before a substantive masculine singular beginning with a vowel or *h* mute. When do you use (*cette*)?—Before all substantives feminine singular. When do you use (*ces*)? Before all substantives plural.

TWELFTH LESSON.

ON INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES.

263. The INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES are those which indicate persons and things in a vague and indeterminate manner, that is to say, without particularizing them; they are always placed before their substantive, and agree with it. They are—

	Masculine.	Feminine.	The English is the same for both genders.
Singular	<i>autre</i> ,*	<i>autre</i> ,	other.
Plural	<i>autres</i> ,*	<i>autres</i> ,	others.

* This adjective is an indefinite pronoun when used instead of a substantive.

	Masculine.	Feminine.	The English is the same for both genders.
Singular	<i>certain,*</i>	<i>certaine,</i>	certain
Plural	<i>certain,</i>	<i>certaines,</i>	certain.
Singular	<i>même,†</i>	<i>même,</i>	same.
Plural	<i>mêmes,†</i>	<i>mêmes,</i>	same.
Singular	<i>quelque,‡</i>	<i>quelque,</i>	whatever or some.
Plural	<i>quelques,</i>	<i>quelques,</i>	whatever or some.

* *Certain* is also a substantive; *il ne faut pas quitter le certain pour l'incertain*, we must not quit the certain for the uncertain.

† *Même*, signifying even, also, is an adverb, therefore invariable.

Il fuit les hommes, ses amis, He shuns men, his friends,
ses enfants même, and also his children.

Il lui a tout donné, même He has given all to him,
ses habits, even his clothes.

Exempts de maux réels, les Free from real evils,
hommes en forment même men create even chimerical
de chimériques, ones.

‡ *Quelque*, followed by *que*, governs the verb in the subjunctive: as, *quelque chemin qu'il suive*, whatever way he may follow.

Quelque, signifying (*however*), is an adverb, and therefore must be invariable.

264. *Quelque chose* (*is only masculine when it signifies a certain thing*), as—

Quelque chose m'est arrivé, Something has happened to me.
Quelque chose de surprenant, Something wonderful.—

(*French Academy.*)

Cet homme a, dans le caractère, That man has, in his character,
quelque chose de bon, something good.

Il y a quelque chose, dans ce There is something, in that
livre, qui mérite d'être lu, book, which is worth reading.

265. In any other case (*when doubtful*) it is feminine, as—

Quelque chose qu'il ait faite, Whatever thing he may have
je le pardonne, done I forgive him.

The indefinite adjective is a pronoun when used instead of a substantive. See indefinite pronouns.

Singular	<i>tel,*</i>	<i>telle,</i>	such.
Plural	<i>tels,</i>	<i>telles,</i>	such.
Singular	<i>tout,†</i>	<i>toute,</i>	all.
Plural	<i>tous,</i>	<i>toutes,</i>	all.

The following have no plural—

Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>aucun,‡</i>	<i>aucune,</i>	nobody.
<i>chaque,</i>	<i>chaque,</i>	each.

* *Tel* is an adjective when it is placed before a substantive, or after the verb *être*.

† 266. *Tout*, signifying all, quite, however, or entirely, being an adverb ought to be invariable, but, for the sake of euphony, when placed before an adjective feminine beginning with a consonant, it agrees with it, as

<i>Elle est toute malade,</i>	She is sick all over.
<i>Elles furent toutes surprises de le voir,</i>	They were all amazed to see him.
<i>De l'eau de vie toute pure.</i>	Brandy quite pure.
<i>Toute savante qu'elle était,</i>	However clever she was.

But if the adjective begins with a vowel (*tout*) does not change, as

<i>Un chien qui a les oreilles tout écorchées,</i>	A dog which has its ears entirely torn.
<i>Des femmes tout éplorées,</i>	Women all in tears.

‡ 267. *Aucun* has no plural, as it is judiciously observed by Féraud that this word is accompanied by a negative particle, consequently exclusive. *Aucun* means no one; then what is the use of the plural. Racine has said in *Phèdre*—

*Aucuns monstres par moi domptés jusqu'aujourd'hui,
Ne m'ont acquis le droit de faillir comme lui.*

It is a mistake, even admitting, with the last edition of the dictionary of the French Academy, that *aucun* without a negation may be used in the plural; for the phrase of Racine is evidently negative.

Aucun used as a term of law signifying *quelques-uns*, may

Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>nul</i> ,*	<i>nulle</i> ,	no.
<i>pas-un</i> ,	<i>pas-une</i> ,	not one.
<i>quelconque</i> ,†	<i>quelconque</i> ,	whatever.
<i>plusieurs</i> has no singular.		many.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

Why are they called indefinite?—Because they do not point out any particular thing. Are they always adjectives?—No, they are so, only when joined to substantives; they are pronouns when used instead of a noun. Give me the particulars of Nos. 264, 265, 266, 267.

be used in the plural, but without negation; and even it would be better to use it in the singular.

268. *Observe*.—*Aucun*, followed by one of the pronouns *qui*, *que*, *dont*, and *où* (adverb), governs the subjunctive, as, *il n'y a aucun de mes amis qui veuille le recevoir*, there are none of my friends who would receive him.

269. The indefinite adjective is a pronoun when used instead of a substantive. See indefinite pronouns.

* 269. *Nul*, as *aucun*, for the same reason, has no plural; although we read in J. J. Rousseau, (*Emile*)—*Nulles autres mains que celles de sa famille n'ont fait les apprêts de sa table*. It is a fault which many other great writers have committed, such as la Bruyère, (*chap. 6.*)—*Nuls besoins, nuls artifices, ne peuvent séparer*, &c. Delille (*Poème de l'Imagination, chant. 7.*) *Dont nuls chantres encor n'ont ombragé leurs fronts*, &c.

† 270. *Quelconque* is always placed after its substantive, and is used with a negation; as, *Il n'y a homme quelconque*, there is no man whatever.

THIRTEENTH LESSON.

ON PRONOUNS.

Pronoun is derived from two Latin words, **PRO** (for), and **NOMEN** (noun). Therefore it is a word used instead of a noun, to avoid the too frequent repetition of the same word. *Pronouns are used as well of necessity when the noun is not known, as also for the sake of brevity and variety when it is known.*

There are **SIX KINDS** of pronouns :—

The **PERSONAL**, the **POSSESSIVE**, the **DEMONSTRATIVE**, the **RELATIVE**, the **INTERROGATIVE**, and the **INDEFINITE**.

ON PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

271. PERSONAL PRONOUNS stand for names of persons or things, and are placed before the verb; except **INTERROGATIVELY**, **IMPERATIVELY**, and **WHEN WE REPEAT THE WORDS OF SOME ONE**; (also see No. 276); they have two genders, masculine and feminine, and two numbers.

There are three kinds of persons; the first, the person who speaks; the second, the person spoken to; the third, the person spoken of.

They are declined thus :—

FIRST PERSON.*

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
	Masculine and Feminine.		Masculine and Feminine.	
	Pronouns used before the verb.	Pronouns used after the verb.	Pronouns used before the verb.	Pronouns used after the verb.
272.				
Nom.	<i>Je†</i> or <i>moi†</i>	I	<i>Nous†.</i>	We
Gen.		<i>de moi§</i> of me	<i>de nous§</i>	of us
Dat.	<i>me</i>	<i>à moi§</i> to me	<i>nous</i> <i>à nous§</i>	to us
Acc.	<i>me</i>	me	<i>nous</i>	us
Abl.		<i>avec moi§</i> with me		<i>pour vous§</i> for us

* 273. Pronouns of the first and second person are the same for both genders, but in the the third person *il* is used for the masculine, and *elle* for the feminine.

† 274. *Je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles*, are always joined to the verb, govern it, and are placed before, except interrogatively and imperatively. *J'* is used only when placed before verbs beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, never after.

‡ 275. *Moi, toi, lui, eux*, in the nominative and vocative, are used without a verb, and are placed either before or after. Examples—

Moi— <i>Je lui parlerais!</i>	I—I would speak to him!
<i>Qui doit partir?</i> Toi or Vous?	Who ought to depart? THOU or YOU?
<i>Qui a fait cela?</i> Lui or Eux?	Who has done that? HE or THEY?
<i>C'est moi, qui doit faire des excuses.</i>	It is I, who should ask pardon.

§ 276. When we use a preposition with the pronoun, that pronoun is placed after the verb. This construction is similar to the English phraseology. Examples—

<i>Il parle de moi.</i>	He speaks of me.
<i>C'est à moi à faire des excuses.</i>	It is for me to ask pardon.
<i>Il vient vers nous; je pense à vous.</i>	He comes to us; I think of you.
<i>Il est venu avec moi.</i>	He came with me.

SECOND PERSON.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
Masculine and Feminine.		Masculine and Feminine.	
Pronouns used before the verb.	Pronouns used after the verb.	Pronouns used before the verb.	Pronouns used after the verb.
277.			
Nom. <i>Tu†</i> or <i>toi‡</i>		Thou <i>Vous†</i>	You
Gen.	<i>de toi </i>	of thee	<i>de vous </i> of you
Dat. <i>te</i>	<i>à toi </i>	to thee	<i>vous à vous </i> to you
Acc. <i>te</i>		thee	you
Voc. (<i>ô toi†</i>)‡		<i>ô thee</i> <i>ô vous†</i>	<i>ô you</i>
Abl.	<i>avec toi </i>	with thee	<i>de vous</i> from you

THIRD PERSON.§

SINGULAR MASCULINE.		PLURAL MASCULINE.	
Pronouns used before the verb.	Pronouns used after the verb.	Pronouns used before the verb.	Pronouns used after the verb.
278.			
Nom. <i>Il†</i> or <i>lui‡</i>		He or it <i> Ils†</i> or <i>eux</i>	They
Gen.	<i>de lui </i>	of him	<i>d' eux </i> of them
Dat. <i>lui</i>	<i>à lui </i>	to him	<i>leur à eux </i> to them
Acc. <i>le</i>		him.	them
Abl.	<i>par lui </i>		<i>par eux </i> from or by them

SINGULAR FEMININE.		PLURAL FEMININE.	
279.			
Nom. <i>Elle†</i>		She or it <i>Elles</i>	They
Gen.	<i>d' elle </i>	of her	<i>d' elles </i> of them
Dat. <i>lui</i>	<i>à elle </i>	to her	<i>leur à elles </i> to them
Acc. <i>la</i>		her	them
Abl.	<i>pour elle </i>	for her	<i>pour elles </i> for them

* See No. 273.

† See No. 275.

‡ See No. 274.

|| See No. 276.

§ In the third person *IL* is used for the masculine, and *ELLE* for the feminine.

280. Personal pronouns are compounded with *même*, as

<i>moi-même</i> ,	myself.	<i>nous-mêmes</i> ,	ourselves.
<i>toi-même</i> ,	thyself.	<i>vous-mêmes</i> ,	yourselves.
<i>lui-même</i> ,	himself.	<i>eux-mêmes</i> ,	} themselves.
<i>elle-même</i> ,	herself.	<i>elles-mêmes</i> ,	

PRONOUN REFLECTIVE.

281.

Nom. (None.)

Gen. *de soi*,* of himself, of herself, of itself.

Dat. *à soi*,* to himself, to herself, to itself.

Acc. *se*,† himself, herself, itself, themselves.

282. Examples how to place the pronoun—

<i>Il me charme</i> ,	He charms me.
<i>Il te charme</i> ,	He charms thee.
<i>Il nous charme</i> ,	He charms us.
<i>Il vous charme</i> ,	He charms you.
<i>Il le tue</i> ,	He kills him or it.
<i>Il la tue</i> ,	He kills her or it.
<i>Il les tue</i> ,	He kills them.

283.

INTERROGATIVELY.

<i>Me charme-t-il ?</i>	Does he charm me ?
<i>Te charme-t-il ?</i>	Does he charm thee ?
<i>Nous voit-il ?</i>	Does he see us ?
<i>Vous aperçoit-il ?</i>	Does he perceive you ?
<i>L' appelle-t-il ?</i>	Does he call him or it ?
<i>La gronde-t-il ?</i>	Does he scold her ?
<i>Les finit-il ?</i>	Does he finish them ?

284.

NEGATIVELY AND INTERROGATIVELY.

<i>Ne me charme-t-il pas ?</i>	Does he not charm me ?
<i>Ne nous charme-t-il pas ?</i>	Does he not charm us ?

* 285. *De soi*, *à soi*, are of both genders, but only used in the singular number.

† 286. *Se* is of both genders and numbers, and is always placed before the verb.

287.

<i>Il m' a vu ;</i>	He has seen me.
<i>Il t' a vu ;</i>	thee.
<i>Il l' a vu ;</i>	him, or it.
<i>Il l' a vue ;</i>	her, or it.
<i>Il nous a vus ;</i>	us.
<i>Il vous a vus ;*</i>	you.
<i>Il les a vus ;</i>	them.

288. <i>m' a-t-il vu ?</i>	Has he seen me ?
<i>t' a-t-il vu ?</i>	thee ?
<i>l' a-t-il vu ?</i>	him, or it ?
<i>l' a-t-il vue ?</i>	her, or it ?
<i>nous a-t-il vus ?</i>	us ?
<i>vous a-t-il vus ?*</i>	you ?
<i>les a-t-il vus ?</i>	them ?

289. <i>Il ne m' a pas vu.</i>	He has not seen me, &c.
<i>Ne m' a-t-il pas vu ?</i>	Has he not seen me ? &c.

290.

FIRST PERSON.

<i>Il ME LE promet,</i>	He promises him or it to me.
<i>Il ME LA promet,</i>	her, or it to me.
<i>Il ME LES promet,</i>	them to me.
<i>Il NOUS LE promet,</i>	him, or it to us.
<i>Il NOUS LA promet,</i>	her, or it to us.
<i>Il NOUS LES promet,</i>	them to us.
<i>Il NOUS EN promet,</i>	us some.
<i>Il M' y envoya,</i>	He sent me there.

291.

SECOND PERSON.

<i>Il TE LE promet,</i>	He promised him, or it to thee.
<i>Il TE LA promet,</i>	her, or it to thee.
<i>Il TE LES promet,</i>	them to thee.
<i>Il VOUS LE promet,</i>	him, or it to you.
<i>Il VOUS LA promet,</i>	her, or it to you.
<i>Il VOUS LES promet,</i>	them to you.

* Speaking of one person, (vu) must be singular.

292.

THIRD PERSON.

<i>Il SE LE rapelle,</i>	He recalls <i>him</i> , or <i>it to himself</i> .
<i>Il SE LA rapelle,</i>	<i>her</i> , or <i>it to himself</i> .
<i>Il SE LES rapelle,</i>	<i>them to himself</i> .
<i>Il S' EN repent,</i>	He repents <i>of it</i> , <i>of them</i> .
<i>Il S' Y adonne,</i>	He gives <i>himself to it</i> , <i>to them</i> .

293.

THIRD PERSON.

<i>Il LE LUI a donné,</i>	He has given <i>him</i> , or <i>it to him</i> , <i>to her</i> .
<i>Il LA LUI a donnée,</i>	<i>her</i> or <i>it to him</i> , <i>to her</i> .
<i>Il LES LUI a donnés,</i>	<i>them to him</i> , <i>to her</i> .
<i>Il LE LEUR a donné,</i>	<i>him</i> or <i>it to them</i> .
<i>Il LA LEUR a donnée,</i>	<i>her</i> or <i>it to them</i> .
<i>Il LES LEUR a donnés,</i>	<i>them to them</i> .

294.

IMPERATIVE OR COMMANDING.

<i>Donnez LE MOI;</i>	Give <i>it to me</i> .
<i>LA MOI;</i>	<i>her to me</i> .
<i>LES MOI;</i>	<i>them to me</i> .
<i>LE NOUS;</i>	<i>it to us</i> .
<i>LA NOUS;</i>	<i>her, or it to us</i> .
<i>LES NOUS;</i>	<i>them to us</i> .

295.

<i>Représente LE TOI;</i>	Represent <i>it to thee</i> .
<i>LA TOI;</i>	<i>her to thee</i> .
<i>LES TOI;</i>	<i>them to thee</i> .
<i>Représentez LE VOUS;</i>	<i>it to you</i> .
<i>LA VOUS;</i>	<i>her, or it to you</i> .
<i>LES VOUS;</i>	<i>them to you</i> .

296.

<i>Donnez LE LUI;</i>	Give <i>it to him</i> .
<i>LA LUI;</i>	<i>her to him</i> .
<i>LES LUI;</i>	<i>them to him</i> .
<i>LE LEUR;</i>	<i>it to them</i> .
<i>LA LEUR;</i>	<i>her, or it to them</i> .

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

Where do you place the personal pronoun in French? Generally before the verb, except interrogatively and imperatively; when we relate the words of some one; and when it is governed by a preposition, it is placed after the verb. You must learn by heart from No. 282 to No. 305, which will teach you at once the different ways of placing the pronoun; you will have only to change the verb.—*See Du Gué's Exercises, "The French Translator."*

FOURTEENTH LESSON.

ON POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

297. The POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS mark possession, and relate to the persons or things of which one speaks. These pronouns are—

Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>le mien, les miens,</i>	<i>la mienne, les miennes,</i>	mine.
<i>le tien, les tiens,</i>	<i>la tienne, les tiennes,</i>	thine.
<i>le sien, les siens,</i>	<i>la sienne, les siennes,</i>	his hers.
<i>le nôtre, les nôtres,</i>	<i>la nôtre, les nôtres,</i>	ours.
<i>le vôtre, les vôtres,</i>	<i>la vôtre, les vôtres,</i>	yours.
<i>le leur, les leurs,</i>	<i>la leur, les leurs,</i>	their.

They are declined thus—

Masculine.			
	Singular.	Plural.	
298. Nom. and Acc.	<i>le mien,</i>	<i>les miens,</i>	mine.
Gen. and Abl.	<i>du mien,</i>	<i>des miens,</i>	of mine.
Dative	<i>au mien,</i>	<i>aux miens,</i>	to mine.
Feminine.			
299. Nom. and Acc.	<i>la mienne,</i>	<i>les miennes,</i>	mine.
Gen. and Abl.	<i>de la mienne,</i>	<i>des miennes,</i>	of mine.
Dative	<i>à la mienne,</i>	<i>aux miennes,</i>	to mine.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Mon cheval est meilleur que</i>	My horse is better than
<i>LE SIEN,</i>	his.
<i>Votre jardin est plus grand</i>	Your garden is larger than
<i>que LE MIEN, mais n'est</i>	mine, but is not so fine as
<i>pas si beau que LE LEUR,</i>	theirs.
<i>Ma jument est plus vite</i>	My mare is quicker than
<i>que la vôtre,</i>	your's.

300. The possessive pronouns used with the verb *To be*, are translated by the personal pronouns in French, thus—

<i>Ce chien est à moi, à nous,</i>	This dog is mine, ours.
<i>—— est à toi, à vous,</i>	—— is thine, your's.
<i>—— est à lui, à elle,</i>	—— is his, her's.

301. The possessive pronoun is translated by the adjective possessive in French, in the following phrases peculiar to the English idiom.

<i>Un de mes oncles,</i>	An uncle of mine.
<i>Une de tes tantes,</i>	An aunt of thine.
<i>Un de ses cousins,</i>	A cousin of his.
<i>Une de ses cousines,</i>	A cousin of her's.
<i>Un de nos moutons,</i>	A sheep of ours.
<i>Une de vos brebis,</i>	A ewe of yours.
<i>Un de leurs agneaux,</i>	A lamb of theirs.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

Do you know the difference between the possessive pronoun and the adjective possessive?—Certainly; the pronoun is used instead of a noun, and is declined with the definite article; the possessive adjective is always placed before the noun to which it belongs, and is declined with the prepositions *de* and *à*. See No. 251. What have you remarked on *NOTRE* and *VOTRE*?—When pronouns, they take a circumflex, thus—*le nôtre, la nôtre, les nôtres, le vôtre, la vôtre, les vôtres*, when adjectives they do not.

FIFTEENTH LESSON.

ON DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

302. The DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS serve to designate and point out objects, and to recal to the idea the person or thing of which we have already spoken, and which agree with it.

Celui, he, or that ; *ceux*, these or those ; *celle*, she, or that ; *celles*, these or those ; *ce*, it, or they ; *ceci*, this ; *cela*, that.

303. These pronouns are declined thus—

		Masculine.	
		Singular.	Plural.
Nom. and Acc.	<i>celui</i> ,	he, or that.	<i>ceux</i> , those.
Gen. and Abl.	<i>de celui</i> ,	of that.	<i>de ceux</i> , of those.
Dative	<i>à celui</i> ,	to that.	<i>à ceux</i> , to those.

304.

		Feminine.	
Nom. and Acc.	<i>celle</i> ,	that.	<i>celles</i> , those.
Gen. and Abl.	<i>de celle</i> ,	of that.	<i>de celles</i> , of those.
Dative	<i>à celle</i> ,	to that.	<i>à celles</i> , to those.

305. *Observe*.—*Celui*, *ceux*, *celle*, *celles*, are always followed by a relative pronoun, a preposition, or by the adverbs *ci** and *là*.* Examples—

<i>Celui qui parle,</i>	He who speaks.
<i>Ceux que je veux,</i>	Those which I wish.
<i>Celle de sa femme,</i>	That of his wife.
<i>Celle à qui je parle,</i>	She to whom I speak.
<i>Celles dont il parle,</i>	Those of which he speaks.

* 306. *Ci* is used for the nearest object, *là* for the most distant.

<i>Celui-ci* est bon, mais</i>	This is good, but those are
<i>celles-la* sont meilleures,</i>	better.
<i>De tous les chevaux que</i>	Of all the horses you have
<i>vous m'avez envoyés,</i>	sent me, the latter are
<i>ceux-ci† sont meilleurs</i>	better than the former.
<i>que ceux-là,</i>	

307. *Ce*† before the verb *To be*, is of both numbers and genders; in the singular it is translated by *it*, and in the plural by *they*. Examples—

<i>C'est moi qui prie,</i>	It is I who begs.
<i>C'est nous qui avons</i>	It is we who have bought
<i>acheté la meute,</i>	the pack of hounds.
<i>Ce sera vous qui partirez,</i>	It will be you who shall go.
<i>Ce sont de beaux enfants,</i>	They are beautiful children.
<i>C'étaient de braves soldats,</i>	They were brave soldiers.
<i>C'est de quoi il se plaint,</i>	It is of what he complains.
<i>C'est un cheval de main,</i>	It is a saddle-horse.
<i>Ce sont des chevaux à</i>	They are horses for the
<i>deux mains,</i>	saddle or draught.

308. *Ce* followed by a relative pronoun is always singular and masculine, and translated by *that*, *which*, or *what*. Examples—

<i>Ce qui me platt,</i>	That which pleases me.
<i>Ce que je dis est vrai,</i>	That which I say is true.
<i>Ce qu'ils demandent,</i>	What they ask.

* 309. *Celui-ci*, *celle-ci*, are translated by *THIS*, or the *LATTER*; *ceux-ci*, *celles-ci*, by *THESE*, or the *LATTER*.

† 310. *Celui-là*, *celle-là*, by *that*, or the former; *celles-là*, by those, or the former.

‡ Do not mistake *ce*, demonstrative pronoun, for *ce*, demonstrative adjective. The first is always joined to the verb *To be*, or is followed by the pronouns *qui*, *que*, *dont*, *de quoi*. The demonstrative adjective is always placed before a substantive.

311. *Ceci*, this ; *cela*, that ; are used to point out some object, without specifying what it is, as

Donnez-moi ceci, ou cela, Give me this or that.

Pourquoi ceci, pourquoi cela ? Why is this, why is that ?

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

Why are they called demonstrative pronouns ?—Because they point out their object. How are they declined ?—See No. 312. What are demonstrative pronouns followed by ?—See No. 314. *Ce* before the verb *to be*, how is it translated ?—By “*it*” in singular, and by “*they*” in the plural ; *indeed* this pronoun should be considered as a neuter one. *Ce* followed by a relative pronoun, how is it translated ?—See No. 317.

SIXTEENTH LESSON.

ON RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

312. Relative pronouns are those which relate to, and agree with, a preceding substantive or pronoun, which is called the **ANTECEDENT**.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Toi qui chante,</i>	Thou, who sings.
<i>L'homme qui parle,</i>	The man who speaks.
<i>La lettre que j'ai reçue,</i>	The letter that I have received.
<i>Le livre dont vous parlez,</i>	The book of which you speak.
<i>La chose à quoi je pense,</i>	The thing of which I think.

Toi is the antecedent of *qui* ; *homme* of *qui* ; *lettre* of *que* ; *livre* of *dont* ; and *chose* of *à quoi*.

313. The relative pronouns are *qui*, *lequel*, and *où*,* and are declined thus—

For both genders and numbers.

Nom.	<i>qui</i> ,†	who, that, which.
Gen.	<i>de qui</i> , <i>dont</i> ,§ <i>de</i>	of whom, whose, of what, of,
	<i>quoi</i> ,	from, or by which.
Dat.	<i>à qui</i> ,† <i>à quoi</i> ,	to whom, to what, to which.
Acc.	<i>que</i> , <i>qui</i> ,	whom, that, which.

314.

	Singular.	
	Masculine	Feminine.
Nom. and Acc.	<i>le quel</i> ,	<i>la quelle</i> ,
Gen. and Abl.	<i>du quel</i> , <i>dont</i> ,§ <i>de</i>	<i>de la quelle</i> , <i>dont</i> ,§
Dative	<i>au quel</i> ,	<i>à la quelle</i> ,
		which.
		of which
		to which.

315.

	Plural.	
Nom. and Acc.	<i>les quels</i> ,	<i>les quelles</i> ,
Gen. and Abl.	<i>des quels</i> , <i>dont</i> ,§ <i>des</i>	<i>des quelles</i> , <i>dont</i> ,§
Dative	<i>aux quels</i> ,	<i>aux quelles</i> ,
		which.
		of which
		or whose.
		to which.

* 316. *Où* may be also considered as a relative pronoun, when it relates to things, as

<i>La terre où je passai</i>	The manor in which I spent
<i>ma jeunesse,</i>	my youth.
<i>Le pays où j'ai vécu,</i>	The country in which I
	have lived.
<i>Le château où je vais,</i>	The castle to which I go.

† *Qui*, who (*i*) is never omitted, even before another *i*.

‡ Used for persons.

§ Employed for persons or things; is of both numbers and genders.

|| Used for things.

317. *Observe.*—*Qui*, relative pronoun, is always of the same number and person as its antecedent, as

<i>Moi qui ai vu,</i>	I who have seen.
<i>Toi qui as vu,</i>	Thou who hast seen.
<i>Nous qui avons vu,</i>	We who have seen.
<i>Vous qui avez vu,</i>	You who have seen.
<i>Eux qui ont vu,</i>	They who have seen.

318. *C'est un des meilleurs ouvrages qui aient* paru,* It is one of the best works which have appeared.

319. *La passion du jeu est un des vices qui ont le plus contribué à la ruine de l'homme,* The passion of gambling is one of the vices which have most contributed to the ruin of man.

320.

<i>Je sais qui vous aimez,</i>	I know whom you love.
<i>Je sais que vous aimez la pêche,</i>	I know that you are fond of fishing.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

What do you mean by antecedent? The word to which the pronoun refers. Do the relative pronouns govern sometimes the verb in the subjunctive? Yes, when it is preceded by a superlative; see No. 327. What gender is *dont*? of which? Of both genders and number, and is used for persons or things. How is *qui* declined? With the prepositions *de* and *à*. See No. 322. How is *quel* declined? With the definite articles. See No. 323.

* 321. Why in the subjunctive, and not in the indicative? Because *qui*, preceded by a superlative, governs the verb in the subjunctive.

SEVENTEENTH LESSON.

ON INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

These pronouns are used in asking questions.
They are declined thus—

322. QUI ?* *is of both genders and numbers and used only for persons.*

Nom.	QUI† <i>implore ?</i>	WHO <i>entreats ?</i>
Gen.	de QUI <i>parlez-vous ?</i>	of WHOM <i>do you speak ?</i>
Dat.	à QUI <i>donnez-vous ?</i>	to WHOM <i>do you give ?</i>
Acc.	QUI† <i>avez-vous battu ?</i>	WHOM <i>have you beaten ?</i>
Voc.	ô QUI <i>que vous-soyez ?</i>	ô WHOM <i>may you be ?</i>
Abl.	avec QUI <i>voyagez-vous ?</i>	with WHOM <i>do you travel ?</i>

323. QUOI and QUE *are of both genders and numbers.*

Gen.	de QUOI <i>parlez-vous ?</i>	of WHAT <i>do you speak ?</i>
Dat.	à QUOI <i>vous adonnez-vous ?</i>	to WHAT <i>do you apply yourself ?</i>
Acc.	QUE, <i>faites-vous là ?</i> <i>qu'est-ce QUE vous faites ?</i>	WHAT <i>are you doing there ?</i>
Voc.	<i>quoi, vous voulez partir ?</i>	
Abl.	avec QUOI <i>voulez-vous acheter cela ?</i>	with WHAT <i>will you buy that ?</i>

* Qui is used for persons ; *quoi*, for things ; and *lequel* for persons or things.

† Qui. The (i) is never omitted, even before another (i.)

Singular.

	Masculine.	Feminine.	
324. Nom.	<i>le quel ?*</i>	<i>la quelle ?*</i>	which ?
Gen.	<i>du quel ?</i>	<i>de la quelle ?</i>	of which ?
Dat.	<i>au quel ?</i>	<i>à la quelle ?</i>	to which ?

Plural.

Nom.	<i>les quels ?*</i>	<i>les quelles ?*</i>	which ?
Gen.	<i>des quels ?</i>	<i>des quelles ?</i>	of which ?
Dat.	<i>aux quels ?</i>	<i>aux quelles ?</i>	to which ?

Observe. We know that *qui*, *quoi*, and *lequel* are interrogative pronouns when used in asking a question.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

How do you know a relative pronoun from an interrogative pronoun, as they are the same in appearance? The relative pronoun must relate to a noun, a pronoun, or a phrase expressed before, with which it agrees; but the interrogative pronoun is only used to ask questions.

* 325. When interrogative adjectives, *quel*, *quelle*, *quels*, *quelles*, (which); are always joined to a substantive, agree with it, and are declined with *de* and *à*, as

<i>quel homme ?</i>	<i>de quel homme ?</i>	<i>à quel homme ?</i>
<i>quelle femme ?</i>	<i>de quelle femme ?</i>	<i>à quelle femme ?</i>
<i>quels matres ?</i>	<i>de quels matres ?</i>	<i>à quels valets ?</i>
<i>quelles matresses ?</i>	<i>de quelles matresses ?</i>	<i>à quelles dames ?</i>

EIGHTEENTH LESSON.

ON INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

326. The INDEFINITE PRONOUNS are those which mark indefinitely one or more persons, without pointing out any individual. They are always used without a substantive. They are—

On, or l'on,

Which is always in the Nominative.

327. *On* or *l'on** has a vague or general signification, and governs the verb in the third person singular,† it is always placed before the verb, except when used interrogatively, and is rendered by, people, they, we, one, it, somebody; as,

On dit, (ou) l'on dit, It is said, (or) people say.

On aime, (ou) l'on aime, We love, (or) they love.

* 328. *L'on* is employed after the words *et, ou, si, que*; and, when the ear allows it, in preference to *on*.

Observe. *ON*, or *L'ON*, is a contraction of the old French word *HOM*, (man), from the Latin *homo*. It was usual to say, *homme dit*, (man says), *homme parle*, (man speaks), from which mode of expression "*on*" has been derived.—*Grammaire Nationale de BESCHERELLE*.

† 329. Remark. *On* or *l'on* only governs the verb, and not the adjective following. Example—

Le charme dure peu; quand on n'est pas jolie.—(GOSSE). The charm is of a short duration when one is only pretty.

Quand on est jeunes, riches; et jolies, comme vous, mesdames, l'on n'est pas reduites à l'artifice.—DIDEROT. When one is young, rich, and pretty, as you, ladies, one is not reduced to artifice.

<i>On se flatte jusqu' à la mort,</i>	People flatter themselves till death.
<i>On vous demande,</i>	Somebody asks for you.
<i>On finit par où l'on devait commencer,</i>	We finish by what we ought to have begun.

330. Used interrogatively after the verb—

<i>Dit-on ?</i>	{ Is it said, (or) do they say ?
<i>Est-ce que l'on dit ?</i>	
<i>Aime-t-on ?</i>	{ Do we love ?
<i>Est ce que l'on aime ?</i>	
<i>A-t-on dit cela ?</i>	Have they said that ?

En,

Which is always either in the Genitive or Ablative.

331. *En* is applicable to persons and things; it is generally used to call to mind something which has been said. *En* is translated by—of him, of her, of it, some, some of them, from him, her, it, or them. This pronoun is always placed before the verb, except in the imperative mood, when it is placed after. Examples—

<i>Avez-vous de l'argent ?</i>	Have you money ?
<i>Oui, j'en ai,</i>	Yes, I have some.
<i>En doutez-vous ?</i>	Do you doubt it ?
<i>Qui en doute ?</i>	Who doubts it ?

332. Imperatively it is placed after the verb.

<i>Prenez-en,</i>	Take some.
<i>Apportez-m'en,</i>	Bring me some.

Y,

Which is always in the Dative.

333. *Y* is seldom used for persons, and is rendered by, therein, in it, to it, about it, about them, and is

always placed before the verb, except in the imperative, where it is placed after. Examples—

<i>J'y prends garde,</i>	I do take care of it.
<i>Y penserai-je ?</i>	Shall I think of it ?
<i>Y a-t-il rien de plus beau !</i>	Is there anything finer !
<i>N'y faites pas attention,</i>	Do not mind it.
<i>Personne ne peut y remédier,</i>	Nobody can remedy it.

334. Imperatively it is used after the verb.

<i>Prenez-y garde,</i>	Take care to it.
<i>Pensez-y.</i>	Think of it.

335. INDEFINITE PRONOUNS (*continued.*)

	Masculine.	Feminine.	
Sing.	<i>autre,*</i>	<i>autre,</i>	other.
Plur.	<i>autres,*†</i>	<i>autres,</i>	others.
Sing.	<i>même,*‡</i>	<i>même,</i>	same, self, alike.
Plur.	<i>mêmes,*</i>	<i>mêmes,</i>	same, self, alike.
Sing.	<i>quelqu'un,§</i>		some-body.
Plur.	<i>quelques uns,</i>	<i>quelques unes,</i>	some persons.

* The pronoun marked with (*) is also used as an indefinite adjective, but then it must be followed by a substantive. See p. 67.

† <i>Tout autre que lui s'en</i>	Any other than he would
<i>rirait,</i>	laugh at it.
<i>N'accablez pas les autres, si</i>	Do not overpower others, if
<i>vous ne voulez pas être</i>	you would not be over-
<i>accablé,</i>	powered.

‡ 335½. *Même* is used after substantives and pronouns, in order to give more force to the expression ; as,

<i>Le général même y était,</i>	The general himself was there.
<i>Ce voleur est le même qui m'</i>	That banditti is the same
<i>attaqua,</i>	which attacked me.
<i>Les cendres du seigneur et du</i>	The ashes of the nobleman and
<i>mendiant sont les mêmes,</i>	of the beggar are the same.

336 *Même*, when an adverb is invariable, and signifies even, also—

<i>Ils me donnèrent même des</i>	They gave me even blows.
<i>coups,</i>	

§ 337. *Quelqu'un*, signifying somebody, is only masculine and singular.

Sing.	<i>tel,*†</i>	<i>telle,</i>	such.
Plur.	<i>tels,*</i>	<i>telles,</i>	such.
Sing.	<i>l'un, l'autre,†</i>	<i>l'une, l'autre,</i>	one another.
Plur.	<i>les uns, les autres,</i>	<i>les unes, les autres,</i>	one another.
Sing.	<i>l'un et l'autre,§</i>	<i>l'une et l'autre,</i>	both.
Plur.	<i>les uns, et les autres,</i>	<i>les unes et les autres,</i>	both.
Sing.	<i>ni l'un ni l'autre,</i>	<i>ni l'une ni l'autre,</i>	neither.
Plur.	<i>ni les uns ni les autres,</i>	<i>ni les unes ni les autres,</i>	neither.

338. The following have no plural :—

Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>aucun,*¶</i>	<i>aucune,</i>	none, any.
<i>autrui,¶</i>	<i>autrui,</i>	other people, others.

The pronoun marked with (*) is also used as an indefinite adjective, but then it must be followed by a substantive. See page 67.

† 339. When *tel* is a pronoun, it is always placed before the verb, and followed by *qui* or *que* ; as,

Tel fait des libéralités, qui ne paie pas ses dettes, He makes presents, who does not pay his debts.
Ils sont tels qu' on le dit, They are such as it is said.
Tel maître tel valet, (A proverb.) Like master like man.

‡ 340. The verb construed with *l'un, l'autre*, must be a reflexive one, unless it be the verb *être* ; as,

Ils se disent des injures l'un, l'autre, They insult one another.
Ils sont ennemis l'un de l'autre, They are enemies to each other.
L'un est riche, l'autre est pauvre, One is rich the other is poor.

§ 341. Of course *l'un et l'autre* govern the verb in the plural, on account of the conjunction (*et*) and.

¶ *Aucun* is used for persons only in the nominative.

¶ *Autrui*, only used when speaking of persons, and is always preceded by a preposition.

Ne faites pas à autrui ce que vous ne voudriez pas qu' on vous fit. Do not to others what you would not wish others to do to you.

<i>chacun</i> ,*	<i>chacune</i> ,	each.
<i>nul</i> ,†	<i>nulle</i> ,	no one.
<i>personne</i> ,†‡	<i>personne</i> ,	nobody, anybody.
<i>pas un</i> ,†§	<i>pas une</i> ,	not one.
<i>quiconque</i> ,	<i>quiconque</i> ,	whoever.
<i>qui que ce soit</i> ,¶	<i>qui que ce soit</i> ,	whoever, whatever.

* *Chacun*—this pronoun is more a distributive than an indefinite pronoun—

<i>Il l'a dit à chacun</i>	He has said so to each
<i>d'entr'eux,</i>	of them.

† 342. *Nul*, *personne*, *pas un*, followed by a negation, have nearly the same signification—

<i>nul,</i>	} <i>ne veut venir,</i>	Not one will come.
<i>personne,</i>		
<i>pas un,</i>		

‡ 343. *Personne*, signifying nobody, is accompanied by the negative *ne*, before the verb ; as,

<i>Celui à qui personne ne plaît,</i>	He whom nobody pleases, is
<i>est plus malheureux que</i>	more unhappy than he who
<i>celui qui ne plaît à personne,</i>	pleases no one.

344. *Personne* is used without a negation, and is translated by anybody, in sentences of interrogation, admiration, wonder, and doubt, and where the adverb *trop* is used ; as,

<i>Y a-t-il personne qui vous aime</i>	Is there anybody who loves
<i>plus que moi ?</i>	you more than I do ?
<i>Il est trop poli pour insulter</i>	He is too polite to insult any
<i>personne,</i>	body.

§ 344½. *Pas un*, not one, requires *ne* after it ; as,

<i>Pas un ne l'aime,</i>	Not one loves him.
--------------------------	--------------------

<i>Quiconque est riche, peut</i>	Whoever is rich is every-
<i>tout,</i>	thing.

¶ *Qui que ce soit* governs the verb in the subjunctive—

<i>Qui que ce soit qui vienne</i>	Whoever comes, tell him to
<i>dites lui d'attendre,</i>	wait.

<i>Quoique ce soit qui arrive,</i>	Whatever may happen, send
<i>faites moi chercher,</i>	for me.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

The indefinite pronouns, are they always so? They are pronouns only when they are employed instead of a noun, but they become adjectives when they are joined to the substantives. What person does *ON* or *L'ON* govern? Always the third person singular. Does *ON* or *L'ON* govern the substantive or adjective following the verb. No; see No. 327.

NINETEENTH LESSON.

ON THE ADVERB.

345. The ADVERB is an invariable word, which is immediately placed after verbs,* adjectives, and even after other adverbs, showing some circumstance of TIME, PLACE, or MANNER, expressing a perfect modification of their meaning; as,

<i>Cet homme parle</i> BEAUCOUP,	That man speaks a great
<i>mais il s'exprime</i> BIEN,	deal, but he expresses him- self well.
<i>Il a parlé</i> AVEC PRUDENCE,	He has spoken prudently.
<i>Je suis venu à</i> CHEVAL,	I came on horseback.
<i>J'irai à</i> PRÉSENT (ou) DEMAIN,	I will go now (or) to-morrow.
<i>Il agit</i> SAGEMENT ?	He acts wisely.
<i>D'où venez-vous ?</i>	Whence do you come ?

* 346. The adverb is ONLY placed before its verb, 1stly, when you begin the phrase with it; 2ndly, before the Infinitive Present. Examples—

<i>CEPENDANT il arriva que</i>	However it happened that
<i>Calypso, &c.</i>	Calypso, &c.
<i>Ne pas se défendre est absurde,</i>	Not to defend oneself is nonsense.

Beaucoup, bien, avec prudence, à cheval, à présent, demain, sagement, d'où, are adverbs, because they modify the verbs to which they are joined.

347. A preposition followed by its *complement*,* as *avec prudence*, with prudence, is equal to the adverb *prudemment*, prudently; thus a preposition and a noun modifying a verb, become an adverb, which is called an *adverbial phrase*. Some adjectives cannot be formed into adverbs, therefore we must use a preposition with the noun; as *véhément*, we do not say *véhémentement*, we must say *avec véhémence, &c.*

Adverbs are either simple; as *passablement*, passably; *fortement*, strongly; or compound;† as *au plus vite*, with all speed; *à tout moment*, every moment.

348. There are nine kinds of Adverbs:

Adverbs of Manner or Quality, of Order, of Time, of Place, of Quantity, of Comparison, of Affirmation, of Negation, of Interrogation.

* 349. Complement signifies that which is added to a word, in order to determine and complete its signification. The adverb does not require a complement; it is a word which serves to modify other words, and which does not leave the mind in expectation of another expression, as the preposition without its complement does; for example, if we say, *Il s'est comporté avec, par, &c.* he behaved with, by;—these prepositions cause us to wait for their complement; instead of which if we say, *Il s'est comporté sagement*, he behaved wisely; the mind requires no other explanation with regard to wisdom.

† The compound adverbs are called adverbial phrases.

350. ADVERBS OF MANNER OR QUALITY express the mode in which things are done ; as,

<i>sagement</i> , wisely.	<i>civilement</i> , civilly.
<i>joliment</i> , prettily.	<i>à merveilles</i> , admirably well.

351. ADVERBS OF ORDER express the method by which things are arranged ; as,

<i>premièrement</i> , firstly.	<i>avant</i> , before.
<i>secondement</i> , secondly.	<i>après</i> , after.

352. ADVERBS OF TIME determine the present, past, or future time of the action expressed by the verb : they answer to the question "when ?" as,

<i>à présent</i> , at present.	<i>demain</i> , to-morrow.
<i>hier</i> , yesterday.	<i>autrefois</i> , formerly.

353. ADVERBS OF PLACE serve to express the difference of distance and situation, with relation to persons and things ; as,

<i>où</i> , where.	<i>ici</i> , here.	<i>là</i> , there.
<i>d'où</i> , whence.	<i>d'ici</i> , from hence.	<i>de là</i> , thence.

354. ADVERBS OF QUANTITY show a certain degree of increase, of diminution, or of perfection, in the action, or in the quality which they modify ; as,

<i>beaucoup</i> , much.	<i>assez</i> , enough.
<i>trop</i> , too much.	<i>peu</i> , little.

355. ADVERBS OF COMPARISON indicate the difference of degrees in the objects of which we speak, which we compare ; as,

<i>ainsi</i> , thus.	<i>autant</i> ,* as much.
<i>aussi</i> ,* as.	<i>plus</i> , more.

* 356. After *aussi*, also ; *autant*, as much ; *tant*, so much ;

357. ADVERBS OF AFFIRMATION are those which express approbation, consent ; as,

<i>oui</i> , yes.	<i>vraiment</i> , truly.
<i>certes</i> , sure.	<i>volontiers</i> , willingly.

358. ADVERBS OF NEGATION are words that are made use of for denying and refusing ; as,

<i>non</i> , no.	<i>point</i> , not.	<i>nullement</i> , by no means.
<i>ni</i> , nor.	<i>pas</i> , not.	<i>point du tout</i> , not at all.

359. ADVERBS OF INTERROGATION are those by which a question is asked, or admiration expressed (?) as—

<i>quand</i> ? when.	<i>combien de fois</i> ? how often.
<i>combien</i> ? how much.	<i>comment</i> ? how.

FORMATION OF ADVERBS.

Adverbs are formed from Adjectives.

360. Rule I. When the adjective ends with a vowel in the MASCULINE, merely add *ment* to make the adverb ; as,

Adjective.	Adverb.	
<i>juste</i> ,	<i>justement</i> ,	justly.
<i>joli</i> ,	<i>joliment</i> ,	prettily.
<i>absolu</i> ,	<i>absolument</i> ,	absolutely.

361. *Except*—*beau*, *fou*, *mou*, *nouveau*, which form their adverbs from the FEMININE, by adding *ment* ; as, *belle*, *folle*, *molle*, *nouvelle*, will make *bellement*, *follement*, *mollement*,

si, so ; used as adverbs of comparison, we place *que*, and never *comme*. *Plus* or *moins* may be preceded by the adverbs *beaucoup* or *guère* ; we can also place *bien* or *beaucoup* before *mieux* and *pis*.

nouvellement ; *impuni*, which make *impunément* ; and the eight following, which change the *e* mute into an *é* sharp ;

<i>aveuglement,</i>	<i>conformément,</i>	<i>opiniâtrément,</i>
<i>commodément,</i>	<i>énormément,</i>	<i>uniformément.</i>
<i>incommodément,</i>	<i>communément,</i>	

362. Rule 2. When the adjective masculine ends with a consonant, the adverb is formed from the adjective FEMININE, by adding *ment* ; as

Adjective.		Adverb.	
Masculine.	Feminine.		
<i>franc,</i>	<i>franche,</i>	<i>franchement,</i>	frankly.
<i>fol,</i>	<i>folle,</i>	<i>follement,</i>	madly.
<i>heureux,</i>	<i>heureuse,</i>	<i>heureusement,</i>	happily.

363. *Except* the nine following, which change the *e* mute into *é* sharp ;

Communément, confusément, diffusément, expressément, immensément, importunément, obscurément, précisément, profondément, and gentil, which makes *gentiment*.

364. Rule 3. Adjectives ending in *nt*, make their adverbs by changing *nt* into *mment* ; as,

<i>vaillant,</i>	<i>vaillamment,</i>	valiantly.
<i>élégant,</i>	<i>élégamment,</i>	elegantly.
<i>éloquent,</i>	<i>éloquemment,</i>	eloquently.
<i>évident,</i>	<i>évidemment,</i>	evidently.

365. *Except* the two following *lent, présent, and véhément,** which make *lentement*, slowly ; and *présentement*, presently ; *véhémentement** vehemently.

* *Il parla véhémentement*, he spoke vehemently (old style) instead of it, we use the compound adverb *avec véhémence*. See No. 347.

ALPHABETICAL LIST OF THE PRINCIPAL ADVERBS.

366.

<i>Ailleurs</i> , Elsewhere.	<i>Instamment</i> , Urgently.
<i>Ainsi</i> , So; thus.	<i>Jadis</i> , In old times.
<i>Autour</i> , Round about.	<i>Jamais</i> , Never.
<i>Alors</i> , At that time.	<i>Jusque</i> , So; far.
<i>Assez</i> , Enough.	<i>Là</i> , Yonder; there.
<i>Aujourd'hui</i> , This day.	<i>Loin</i> , Far off.
<i>Auparavant</i> , Before.	<i>Lors</i> , At the time.
<i>Aussi</i> , <i>si</i> , Also.	<i>Maintenant</i> , Now.
<i>Aussitôt</i> , Immediately.	<i>Mieux</i> , Better, rather.
<i>Autant</i> , As much.	<i>Moins</i> , Less, except.
<i>Autrefois</i> , Formerly.	<i>Naguère</i> , Formerly.
<i>Beaucoup</i> , Much.	<i>Ne</i> , Not.
<i>Bien</i> , Well.	<i>Néanmoins</i> ,
<i>Cà</i> , Hither.	<i>Non, pour ne pas</i> , No.
<i>Certes</i> , Truly.	<i>Notamment</i> , Especially.
<i>Céans</i> , Within.	<i>Nuitamment</i> , In the night.
<i>Cependant</i> , Nevertheless.	<i>Où</i> , Where, whither.
<i>Ci</i> , Here.	<i>Parfois</i> , Sometimes.
<i>Combien</i> , How much.	<i>Partout</i> , Everywhere.
<i>Comment</i> , How.	<i>Peu</i> , Little, few.
<i>Davantage</i> , More.	<i>Pis</i> , Worse.
<i>Dedans</i> , In, within.	<i>Plus</i> , More, most.
<i>Dehors</i> , Abroad.	<i>Plutôt</i> , Rather, sooner.
<i>Déjà</i> , Already.	<i>Pourtant</i> ,
<i>Demain</i> , To-morrow.	<i>Presque</i> , Almost, very near.
<i>Désormais</i> , Henceforth.	<i>Puis</i> , Then, afterwards.
<i>Dessous</i> , Under.	<i>Quasi</i> , Almost, even.
<i>Dessus</i> , Above.	<i>Quelquefois</i> , Sometimes.
<i>Dorénavant</i> , Henceforth.	<i>Sciemment</i> , Knowingly.
<i>Encore</i> , Again; yet.	<i>Souvent</i> , Often.
<i>Enfin</i> , At last.	<i>Surtout</i> , Especially.
<i>Ensemble</i> , Together.	<i>Tant</i> , So much, both.
<i>Ensuite</i> , Afterwards.	<i>Tantôt</i> , A little while ago.
<i>Fort</i> , Very; hard.	<i>Tard</i> , Late.
<i>Gratias</i> , For nothing.	<i>Tôt</i> , Soon, quickly.
<i>Guère</i> , But little.	<i>Toujours</i> , Always.
<i>Hier</i> , Yesterday.	<i>Toutefois</i> , Nevertheless.
<i> Ici</i> , Here, Hither.	<i>Très</i> , Most.
<i>Incessamment</i> , Incessantly.	<i>Trop</i> , Too much.
<i>Incognito</i> , Unknown.	<i>Volontiers</i> , Willingly.
<i>Incontinent</i> , Immediately.	<i>Vite</i> , Quickly.

ADVERBS DERIVED FROM ADJECTIVES.

367.

<i>Distinctement</i> , Distinctly.	<i>Véritablement</i> , Truly.
<i>Médiocrement</i> , Indifferently.	<i>Doucement</i> , Softly.
<i>Sagement</i> , Wisely.	<i>Bonnement</i> , Honestly.
<i>Poliment</i> , Politely.	<i>Franchement</i> , Plainly.
<i>Modestement</i> , Modestly.	<i>Civilement</i> , Civilly.
<i>Inconsidérément</i> , Rashly.	<i>Gentiment</i> , Neatly.
<i>Premièrement</i> , Firstly.	<i>Lentement</i> , Slowly.
<i>Secondement</i> , Secondly.	<i>Présentement</i> , Presently.
<i>Troisièmement</i> , Thirdly.	<i>Prudemment</i> , Prudently.
<i>Utilement</i> , Usefully.	<i>Élégamment</i> , Elegantly.
<i>Vraiment</i> , Truly.	<i>Doctement</i> , Learnedly.
<i>Ingénument</i> , Ingenuously.	<i>Savamment</i> , Learnedly.
<i>Aisément</i> , Freely.	<i>Fièremment</i> , Haughtily.
<i>Impunément</i> , With impunity.	<i>Etourdiment</i> , Rashly.

ALPHABETICAL LIST OF THE PRINCIPAL ADVERBIAL
LOCUTIONS.

368.

<i>A jamais</i> , For ever.	<i>De même</i> , In like manner.
<i>A la fois</i> , All at once.	<i>De plus</i> , Furthermore.
<i>A l'envi</i> , In emulation of one another.	<i>De suite</i> , Together.
<i>A part</i> , Aside.	<i>De nuit</i> , By night.
<i>Après demain</i> , After to-morrow.	<i>De jour</i> , By day.
<i>A présent</i> , At present.	<i>Dès lors</i> , Ever since.
<i>A regret</i> , Grudgingly.	<i>D'ici</i> , From this place.
<i>A tort</i> , Without a cause.	<i>D'ordinaire</i> , As usual.
<i>A loisir</i> , At leisure.	<i>D'où</i> , From whence.
<i>A peine</i> , Hardly.	<i>Du reste</i> , As for the rest.
<i>Avant-hier</i> , The day before yesterday.	<i>Du moins</i> , At least.
<i>Avec soin</i> , With care.	<i>Du tout</i> , At all.
<i>Avec peine</i> , With trouble.	<i>En avant</i> , Forward.
<i>À l'amiable</i> , Amicably.	<i>En arrière</i> , Backward.
<i>ça et là</i> , This way and that way.	<i>En vain</i> , To no purpose.
<i>Ci-après</i> , Hereafter.	<i>En sus</i> , Upward.
<i>Coup sur coup</i> , One after another.	<i>Jusque là</i> , So far.
<i>D'abord</i> , Presently.	<i>La dedans</i> , Within.
<i>D'accord</i> , I grant it.	<i>Longtemps</i> , Long while.
<i>D'ailleurs</i> , Besides.	<i>Mal à propos</i> , Unseasonably.
<i>De là</i> , From thence.	<i>Ne pas, ne point</i> , } Not.
<i>De ça et de là</i> , Up and down.	<i>Ne plus</i> , }
	<i>Ni plus ni moins</i> , All the same.
	<i>Nulle part</i> , Nowhere.
	<i>Par hasard</i> , By chance.
	<i>Par ici</i> , This way.

<i>Par là</i> , That way.	<i>Sans dessus dessous</i> , Topsy-turvey.
<i>Pêle mêle</i> , Confusedly.	<i>Tout d'un coup</i> , One after another.
<i>Peut-être</i> , Maybe.	<i>Tout à fait</i> , Entirely.
<i>Plutôt</i> , Sooner.	<i>Tout à l'heure</i> , By-and-bye.
<i>Plus tard</i> , Later.	<i>Une fois pour toutes</i> , Once for all.
<i>Quelque part</i> , Some place.	
<i>Sans doute</i> , Without doubt.	
<i>Tôt ou tard</i> , Sooner or later.	
<i>Tour à tour</i> , By turns.	

ADJECTIVES USED ADVERBIALY.

369.

<i>Chanter juste</i> , To sing truly.	<i>Lire haut</i> , To read aloud.
<i>Voir clair</i> , To be clear-sighted.	<i>Chanter faux</i> , To sing falsely.
<i>Rester court</i> , To remain short.	<i>Tenir bon</i> , To hold fast.
<i>Coûter cher</i> , To cost dearly.	<i>Frapper ferme</i> , To strike hard.
<i>Parler bas</i> , To speak softly.	<i>Macher droit</i> , To behave one's-
<i>Frapper fort</i> , To strike strongly.	self well.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

What is the use of an adverb? To modify verbs, adjectives, and even other adverbs. Where is the adverb to be placed in French? After the verb. Is the adverb always placed before the verb? No. When do you place it before the verb? When you begin the sentence with it, or before a present infinitive. See No. 346. How do you form adverbs? Generally from adjectives. See Nos. 360, 362, 364.

TWENTIETH LESSON.

ON PREPOSITIONS.

370. A Preposition is an invariable part of speech placed before another word which it governs;* also serves to point out the relation of things to each other, as

J'ai vu le cocher AUPRÈS DE lui, I saw the coachman with him.
J'ai trouvé le carrosse HORS DE la ville, I met the coach out of the city.
Il est à FLEUR D'eau, It is betwixt wind and water.

In these phrases the words *auprès de* ; *hors de* ; *à fleur de* ; are prepositions.

Observe.—The preposition has, of itself, but an imperfect sense, it must be followed by a word which completes its signification; this word is called the regimen or complement of the preposition. Thus in the above examples the words *lui*, *la ville*, *eau*, are severally the regimen or complement of the prepositions, *auprès de*, *hors de*, *à fleur d'*.

The same preposition may express different relations, and different senses must be expressed by different prepositions (the same as in English). In this phrase: *cette montre est à vous*, this watch is yours; the preposition *à* marks a relation of property. In this other phrase: *je vais à Dublin*, I am going to Dublin; the preposition *à* expresses a relation of place.

371. Prepositions are simple or compound.

* 372. Prepositions govern substantives in the ablative or prepositional case, and verbs in the present infinitive, except (*en*,) which requires the verb in the present participle.

373. Simple prepositions are those which consist only of one word, as

<i>de</i> , of.	<i>avec</i> , with.	<i>dans</i> , into.
<i>dès</i> , from.	<i>chez</i> , at.	<i>en</i> , in.

374. Compound prepositions are those which are formed of a simple preposition and another word, as,

<i>au lieu de</i> , instead of.	<i>à la faveur de</i> , by means of.
<i>au milieu de</i> , in the middle of.	<i>en dépit de</i> , in spite of.

375. PREPOSITIONS in French govern their verbs in the PRESENT INFINITIVE,* except *en*, which requires verbs in the PRESENT PARTICIPLE.†

<i>Il faut commencer par ap-</i>	You must begin with learn-
<i>prendre à lire, et en même tems</i>	ing to read, and at the same
<i>à conjuguer les verbes,</i>	time to conjugate the verbs.
<i>Je viens pour vous prier de</i>	I come to beg of you to
<i>me rendre un grand service,</i>	grant me a great service.

EN.

376. *En*‡ governs the participle present.

<i>en dansant</i> , in dancing.	<i>en parlant</i> , in speaking.
<i>en mangeant</i> , in eating.	<i>en buvant</i> , in drinking.

* Governs "*the verb*" signifies that the preposition must have the verb after it in the present infinitive.

† 377. In English every preposition governs the present participle, except *to*, which is the sign of the present infinitive.

‡ Governs "*the present participle*" signifies that the preposition *en* must have the verb after it in the present participle.

REMARKS ON SOME PREPOSITIONS.

How to use *à, de, pour, dans* and *en*, before the present infinitive.

A.

378. *A* denotes what is proper to be done, the merit or demerit of persons and things, their seeming capacity, aptitude, fitness, disposition, and direction; as,

<i>Un conseil à suivre,</i>	An advice worth following.
<i>Des fruits bons à garder,</i>	Fruits good for keeping.
<i>C'est une affaire à le perdre,</i>	It is an affair to ruin him.

DE.

379. *De* is used *before* the present infinitive; after past participles, and adjectives signifying fullness, emptiness, plenty, or want; after verbs showing that the *thing is past*, and after almost all nouns, provided they do not signify or imply inclination, reluctance, aptness, fitness, or unfitness; as,

<i>Indigne de vivre,</i>	Unworthy to live.
<i>Je suis charmé de vous voir,</i>	I am delighted to see you.
<i>Il a le bonheur de plaire,</i>	He has the good fortune to please.
<i>Je viens d'acheter un cheval,</i>	I have just bought a horse.

POUR.

380. *Pour* denotes the end, cause, purpose, or reason for doing a thing, and answers to the English words, *to, for, in order to, with a design to*; as,

<i>Je vais à Londres pour acheter des livres,</i>	I am going to London to buy books.
---	------------------------------------

<i>J' ai été à la ville pour arranger mes affaires,</i>	I have been in town to settle my business.
<i>Je suis venu pour terminer cette affaire,</i>	I am come to finish this busi- ness.
<i>Je veux travailler pour ma famille avec plaisir,</i>	I will work for my family with pleasure.

DANS.

381. *Dans* denotes state, disposition, marks the time in which something is executed, presents a DEFINITE SENSE, and expresses the inside of a thing. *DANS is always followed by the article, except before proper names, adjectives of number, possessive, demonstrative, and relative pronouns ; as,*

<i>Dans la ville,</i>	Into the city.
<i>Sauter dans la mer,</i>	To jump into the sea.
<i>Etre dans la chambre,</i>	To be in the room.

EN.

382. *En* denotes state and manner, being in or going to a country ; marks the movement, and the time in which a thing is doing. *After the preposition EN no article is used (see No. 52, page 18), neither the possessive, or demonstrative adjectives ; as,*

<i>Il est en prison,</i>	He is in prison.
<i>Vivre en liberté,</i>	To live in liberty.

LIST OF PREPOSITIONS.

383. *Governing the Ablative in French, and the Accusative in English.*

<i>Avant le déluge,</i>	Before the deluge.
<i>Après vous,</i>	After you.
<i>Avec son frère,</i>	With his brother.
<i>A travers le corps,</i>	Through the body.
<i>Autour de la maison,</i>	Round or about the house.
<i>Auprès de lui,</i>	Near him.
<i>Chez vous,</i>	At your house.

<i>Contre la muraille,</i>	Against the wall.
<i>Devant lui,</i>	Before him.
<i>Dans la chambre,</i>	In the room.
<i>Depuis son arrivée,</i>	Since his arrival.
<i>Dès le commencement,</i>	From the beginning.
<i>Derrière le jardin,</i>	Behind the garden.
<i>Dessus, ou dessous la table,</i>	Over or under the table.
<i>Durant la paix,</i>	During the peace.
<i>En Angleterre,</i>	In England.
<i>Entre les fenêtres,</i>	Between the windows.
<i>Envers le prochain,</i>	Towards one's neighbour.
<i>Excepté son père,</i>	Except his father.
<i>Ensuite de quoi,</i>	After which.
<i>Faute d'argent,</i>	For want of money.
<i>Hors du cabinet,</i>	Out of the closet.
<i>Le long de la haie,</i>	Along the hedge.
<i>Loin de ses ennemis,</i>	Far from his enemies.
<i>Moyennant une somme d'argent.</i>	For a sum of money.
<i>Malgré elle,</i>	Against her will.
<i>Nonobstant, ou malgré sa mère,</i>	Notwithstanding, or in spite of his mother.
<i>Outre son logement,</i>	Besides his lodging.
<i>Par terre,</i>	By land.
<i>Parmi les riches,</i>	Among the rich.
<i>Pendant l'hiver,</i>	During the winter.
<i>Pour sa pension,</i>	For his pension.
<i>Près, ou proche du Palais-Royal,</i>	Near the Royal Palace.
<i>Sans amis,</i>	Without friends.
<i>Selon, ou suivant votre avis,</i>	According to your advice.
<i>Sous les décombres,</i>	Under the rubbish.
<i>Sur le toit,</i>	Upon the roof.
<i>Touchant cette affaire,</i>	Concerning that affair.
<i>Vers le soir,</i>	About the evening.
<i>Vis à vis de la Bourse,</i>	Over against the Exchange.

384.

Les Prépositions suivantes gouvernent le Datif.

The following Prepositions govern the directive Case.

<i>A,</i>	To.
<i>Conformément aux coutumes,</i>	Agreeably to customs.
<i>Jusqu' aux nues,</i>	To the clouds.
<i>Par rapport à ses pratiques,</i>	By reason of his customers.
<i>Quant à moi,</i>	As for my part.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

What is a preposition? An invariable word which points out the relation that words have to each other. What case does it govern? The ablative or prepositional case. Does the preposition govern always the ablative? No; *à* governs the DATIVE; *de*, after another noun, the GENITIVE. See No. 56, p. 15. Can you use *à*, *de*, *pour*, *dans*, and *en* indifferently? No; see Nos. 378 to 382. Can a preposition in French govern the accusative? No. Why? Because the accusative in French must receive the direct action expressed by the verb; as, *J'amuse l'enfant*, I amuse the child. Child receives the direct action expressed by *amuse*; but if I say, *Je parle de l'enfant*, I speak of the child; child is the object of *de* and not of the verb, therefore is the prepositional case, or ablative in French. What tense does the preposition govern? The present infinitive, *except* *en*, which governs the present participle. In ENGLISH what tense does the preposition govern? The present participle, *except* *to*, which governs the PRESENT INFINITIVE.

 TWENTY-FIRST LESSON.

ON CONJUNCTIONS.

385. The Conjunctions are invariable words, which serve to link one phrase with another. When we say: *Il se promène et lit en même temps*, he walks and he reads at the same time; this word *et* unites the first phrase, *il se promène*, (he walks), with the second, *il lit*, (he reads.)

386. Conjunctions are either simple or compound.

Simple when they are expressed by a single word :
as, *et*, *si*, *donc*, *soit*.

Compound when they are formed of several words :
as, à moins que, à fin que, pourvu que, &c. are compound conjunctions or conjunctive phrases.

387. Some conjunctions govern the indicative mood,
 others the subjunctive mood ;* *as,*

Je crois qu'il est venu, I believe he has come.
Entrez sans qu' il vous voie, Get in without his seeing you.

CONJUNCTIONS THE MOST IN USE.

388.

<i>aussi,*</i>	also.	<i>ni,</i>	nor, neither.
<i>aussi bien que,</i>	as well as.	<i>or,</i>	now, but.
<i>autant,</i>	as well as.	<i>ou,</i>	or else.
<i>ainsi,</i>	thus.	<i>puisque,</i>	since.
<i>car,</i>	for.	<i>parceque,</i>	because.
<i>cependant,</i>	yet.	<i>pourtant,</i>	however.
<i>depuis que,</i>	since.	<i>que,†</i>	that.
<i>donc,</i>	when.	<i>quand,</i>	although.
<i>de même que,</i>	as just as.	<i>sans doute,</i>	without doubt.
<i>de sorte que,</i>	so that.	<i>si bien que,</i>	so that.
<i>de manière que,</i>	so that.	<i>si,</i>	if.
<i>et,</i>	and.	<i>si-non,</i>	if not.
<i>enfin,</i>	at last.	<i>soit,</i>	whether.
<i>lorsque,</i>	when.	<i>soit que,</i>	or.
<i>mais,</i>	but.	<i>tandis que,</i>	whilst.
<i>néanmoins,</i>	nevertheless.	<i>tellement que,</i>	so that.
<i>non seulement,</i>	not only.	<i>vu que,</i>	considering that.

* See Du Gué's GRAMMATICAL EXERCISES, (*The French Translator.*)

* *Aussi*, followed by *que*, is translated by *as*.

† *Que* is the conjunction most in use; it is distinguished from the relative pronoun *que*; *in that it is equally preceded by a verb*, and that it cannot be changed by *lequel*, or *laquelle*, which.

CONJUNCTIONS WHICH GOVERN THE SUBJUNCTIVE
MOOD.

389.

A Dieu ne plaise que,
au cas que,
avant que,
afin que,
à moins que,
bien loin que,
bien que,
ce n'est pas que,
de crainte que,
de peur que,
Dieu veuille que,
excepté que,
encore que,
jusqu' à ce que,
loin que,
malgré que,
moyennant que,
non pas que,
plut à Dieu que,
posé le cas que,
pour que,
pour peu que,
pourvu que,
quelque,
quoique,
sans que,
si ce n'est que,
supposé que,
tant s'en faut que,

God forbid that.
 in case.
 before.
 in order that.
 unless.
 far from.
 though, although.
 it is not for that.
 for fear, that lest.
 for fear that.
 God grant that.
 except.
 or, though, although.
 until.
 far from.
 although, spite of.
 on consideration that.
 not that.
 would to God that.
 suppose.
 in order that.
 ever so little.
 provided that.
 whatever, however.
 though, although.
 without.
 except, that.
 suppose.
 far from it, that,

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

What is the use of the conjunction? To connect one phrase with another; to unite the clauses or words of the same sentence. What mood do they govern? The indicative or the subjunctive. How can you know when to use the proper mood? By referring to No. 289, where a list of all the conjunctions which govern the subjunctive is given. For the syntax of the conjunctions see DU GUE'S EXERCISES (*the French Translator.*)

 TWENTY-SECOND LESSON.

ON INTERJECTIONS.

390. THE INTERJECTION is an invariable part of speech, made use of to express, at once, the lively and sudden emotions of the soul; as grief, joy, surprise, admiration, &c. There are as many interjections as there are different passions.

Here are the principal interjections:—

391.

<i>ah !</i>	<i>ha !</i>	}	express joy.
<i>bon !</i>	<i>well !</i>		
<i>ho !</i>	<i>ho !</i>		
<i>âie ! of !</i>	<i>pho !</i>	}	... pain, affliction.
<i>hélas ! ahi !</i>	<i>alas !</i>		
<i>ah ! hê !</i>	<i>ha !</i>		... fear.
<i>fi ! fi donc !</i>	<i>fye !</i>		... disgust, aversion.
<i>oh ! hê ! sest !</i>	<i>oh !</i>		... derision.
<i>volontiers !</i>	<i>be it so !</i>	}	... consent.
<i>soit !</i>	<i>whether !</i>		

<i>oh ! ho !</i>	oh !	express admiration.
<i>oh ! ha ! ah !</i>	oh ! ha !	... surprise.
<i>ça ! allons !</i>	come on !	} ... encouragement, expectation.
<i>courage !</i>	courage !	
<i>oh ça !</i>	come !	
<i>tenez ferme !</i>	hold fast !	
<i>gare !</i>	take care !	} ... caution.
<i>holà !</i>	halloo !	
<i>hem !</i>	hem !	
<i>tout beau !</i>	soho !	
<i>holà ! hem !</i>	halloo !	} ... calling.
<i>hé bien !</i>	well !	
<i>chut ! paix ! st !</i>	whist !	... silence.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

What is an interjection ? When we feel a lively unforeseen emotion, our soul is too strongly moved, too quickly seized, to allow us to express our sentiment by many words. A cry escapes from our mouth and expresses with truth the veracity of the sentiment which has overpowered us. Thus, *ah ! aie ! oh ! hélas !* are interjections. What is the derivation of the word interjection ? From two Latin words (*inter*) in, and (*jactare*,) to throw. Interjections or exclamations are words thrown into the discourse to express passion, emotion, &c.; they were the first elements of the language. It is by these expressive cries, accompanied by gestures that men endeavour to communicate to each other their passions. Can we consider, *oui*, *non*, *voici*, *voilà*, *neni*, *soit*, *si*, (signifying yes), *adieu*, *bonjour*, as interjections ? Certainly it is better to classify these words as interjections ; for interjections express, in a single word an entire phrase, and the words *OUI*, *NON*, &c., represent an entire proposition, but without EXCLAMATION—

OUI	is used for	<i>cela est oui,</i>	that is heard.
NON	<i>cela n'est pas,</i>	that is not.
BONJOUR	<i>le jour soit bon à</i>	the day be
		<i>vous,</i>	good to you.
ADIEU	<i>soyez à Dieu,</i>	be to God, &c.
			(GILARD.)

TWENTY-THIRD LESSON.

ON THE VERB.

392. A VERB is a word which declares existence, action, or endurance ; as, *je suis aimé*, I am loved ; *j'ai*, I have ; *je suis*, I am ; *je parle*, I speak ; *tu pries*, thou prayest. Every part of a verb (*except the participles and the infinitive mood*) requires a subject or nominative.

Observe.—We know, therefore, that a word is a verb, when it will make sense with any of the personal pronouns (*je*, I ; *tu*, thou ; *il*, he ; *elle*, she ; *nous*, we ; *vous*, you ; *ils*, *elles*, they) before it ; thus we know that the following parts of *aimer* are verbs, because we can place any of the personal pronouns before them and make sense ; as,

<i>J'aime,</i>	I love.	<i>Nous aimons,</i>	we love.
<i>Tu aimes,</i>	thou lovest.	<i>Vous aimez</i>	you love.
<i>Il, elle aime,</i>	he loves.	<i>Ils, elles aiment,</i>	they love.

THERE ARE SIX KINDS OF VERBS.

The Auxiliary Verbs, the Active Verbs, the Passive Verbs, the Neuter Verbs, the Pronominal Verbs, and the Impersonal Verbs.

393. AUXILIARY VERBS are those used to form the compound tenses of other verbs ; they are called auxiliary from *auxilium*, a Latin word which signifies aid, assistance, help. The verbs *avoir*, to have, and *être*, to be, are frequently used as auxiliary verbs.

394. AN ACTIVE OR TRANSITIVE VERB is one which expresses action passing to an object.

We know that a verb is active when, after any part of it, we can place with propriety an accusative or objective case; as *quelqu'un*, some one; or *quelque chose*, some thing; thus:—

<i>Il aime quelqu'un,</i>	He loves some one.
<i>Il aperçoit quelqu'un,</i>	He perceives some one.
<i>Il voit quelque chose,</i>	He sees something.
<i>Il fait quelque chose,</i>	He does something.

We see that the words *aime*, *aperçoit*, *voit*, and *fait*, are active verbs, because they will make sense with the words *quelqu'un* and *quelque chose* after them. The compound tenses of active verbs are formed with the auxiliary, *avoir*, to have; as,

<i>J'ai acheté du papier,</i>	I have bought some paper.
<i>Nous avons reçu† des lettres,</i>	We have received letters.

395. A PASSIVE VERB* expresses the suffering, or the receiving of an action; as,

<i>Je suis aimé de mon père,</i>	I am loved by my father.
<i>Nous sommes aimés‡ de nos amis,</i>	We are loved by our friends.

Observe.—The Passive Verb is formed by joining any part of the verb (*être*,) to be, to the participle past of the active verb; and by placing *de*, of; *par*, by, after the verb. It will be observed that the object of the active verb becomes the subject of the passive verb; as,

Active.	Passive.
<i>J'aime mon père,</i>	<i>Mon père est aimé de moi,</i>
I love my father.	My father is loved by me.

* We must remark—First, that a passive verb has necessarily its active verb, of which it is formed. Secondly, we know that a verb is passive when after that verb we can place with propriety *de quelqu'un* of some one; or *par quelque chose*, by some thing.

Thirdly, that the passive verbs are conjugated in all their tenses with the auxiliary, *être*, to be.

† See No. 432.

‡ See No. 431.

Active.
Ma mère punit mon
frère,
 My mother punishes
 my brother.

Passive.
Mon frère est puni par
ma mère,
 My brother is punished by
 my mother.

396. A NEUTER VERB,* or INTRANSITIVE, is one in which the action does not pass to any object, but is confined to the agent; as,

<i>Je dors profondément,</i>	I sleep profoundly.
<i>Nous partirons demain,</i>	We shall set off to-morrow.

Observe.—A neuter verb does not admit of an objective case after it. Therefore we know that a verb is neuter when it will not make sense with the addition of *quelqu'un*, some one; *quelque chose*, some thing; thus *dormir*, *partir*, are neuter, because we cannot say with propriety, *je dors quelqu'un*, I sleep some one; *je pars quelque chose*, I set off something.

397. The compound tenses of neuter verbs are formed with *avoir* and few with *être*.

398. PRONOMINAL VERBS are those which require the addition of a pronoun in the same person as the subject; as,

<i>Julie se promène,</i>	Julia is walking.
<i>Je me repose,</i>	I rest myself.
<i>Ils se disent des injures,</i>	They insult each other.
<i>Elles se meurent,</i>	They are dying.

399. The pronominal verbs are *reflective* or *reciprocal*.

* Neuter comes from the Latin word NEUTER, which signifies *ni l'un ni l'autre*, (*nec unus nec alter*,) neither one nor the other.

400. They are reflective when they throw back the action on the subject ; as,

Je me flatte, I flatter myself.
Je m'ennuie de ce paysage, I am tired myself of this view.

401. They are reciprocal when they interchange the action with each other, as

Ils se disent des injures, They insult each other.
Ils se louent, They praise each other.

402. An IMPERSONAL VERB* is an irregular verb, of which the subject is ALWAYS the pronoun *il*, used impersonally. In this case, *il* cannot be replaced by the words *quelqu'un, ou quelque chose* ; as,

Il faut, It is necessary.. *Il grêle,* It hails.
Il pleut, It rains. *Il est,* It is.

Observe.—Every verb of which the pronoun (*il*) is the subject is an impersonal verb, if we cannot substitute a noun for that pronoun ; as in the following phrases :—

Il convient que nous nous retirions, It is proper that we should retire.
Il s'agit de votre bonheur, Your happiness is in question.

403. Impersonal verbs are conjugated, some with *avoir*, as, *il a fallu*, it has been necessary ; *il a neigé*, it has snowed ; *il a grêlé*, it has hailed ; some with *être* ; *il est important*, it is important ; *il est nécessaire*, or, *c'est nécessaire*, it is necessary.

ON PERSONS OF VERBS.

404. THERE ARE THREE PERSONS in verbs, to correspond with the three persons of nouns and pronouns.

* Impersonal comes from *impersonalis*, a Latin word which signifies, wanting all persons with the exception of ONE.

- The first agrees with the person who speaks; the second, with the person to whom one speaks; the third with the person or thing of which one speaks.
405. The pronouns *je, nous*, indicate the first person; as, *je mange*, I eat; *nous mangons*, we eat.
406. The pronouns *tu, vous*, indicate the second person, as, *tu manges*, thou eatest; *vous mangez*,* you eat.
407. The pronouns *il, elle, ils, elles*, and every noun of which one speaks, indicate the third person; as, *il mange*, he eats; *elle mange*, she eats; *ils mangent*, they eat; *elles mangent*, they eat; *l'enfant mange*, the child eats; *le cheval mange*, the horse eats; *les chevaux mangent*, the horses eat.

ON NUMBERS OF VERBS.

408. THERE ARE TWO NUMBERS in verbs; the Singular, which is used when we speak of one person or one thing; the Plural, when we speak of many persons or things. In both numbers there are three persons,

ON MOODS OF VERBS.

409. We call moods the different modes or manner of expressing the verb.
410. There are FIVE MOODS.—The Infinitive, the Indicative, the Conditional, the Subjunctive, and the Imperative.

* The second person plural is in politeness used addressing one person. *Tu* is only used to show great intimacy or friendship; sometimes also to show contempt.

411. The **INFINITIVE MOOD*** expresses the state or action in a general or indefinite manner ; as *parler*, to speak ; *finir*, to finish ; *apercevoir*, to perceive ; *rendre*, to render.
412. The **INDICATIVE MOOD** affirms or declares a thing, either that it acts, that it has acted, or that it will act ; as, *je lis*, I read ; *j'ai lu*, I have read ; *je lirai*, I will read. The Indicative has eight tenses : the Present, the Imperfect, the Perfect, the Perfect Indefinite, the Perfect Anterior, the Pluperfect, the Future, and the Future Compound.
413. The **CONDITIONAL MOOD** declares that a thing would be, or that it would have been, but with a condition ; as, *j'achèterais une montre, si j'en avais l'argent*, I would buy a watch if I had the money ; *j'aurais vendu ma maison, si j'avais pu*, I would have sold my house, if I had been able. The Conditional has two tenses—the Present and the Compound.
414. The **SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD**, in order to make sense requires to be preceded by, and dependant on another verb, either expressed or understood, and therefore it denotes the action or condition of the subject under the government of another verb. It is followed by a conjunction, expressed or understood. As, *il faut qu'il aille*, he must go ; *j'aimerais qu'il vînt*, I should like that he would come ; *je voudrais que vous vissiez*, I would like you might see. The Subjunctive has four tenses,

* The Infinitive present is always governed by a verb, or by a preposition. See page 100, No. 375.

the Present, the Imperfect, the Perfect, and the Pluperfect.

415. We use the Present Subjunctive **ONLY** when the verb, which governs it, is in the Present Indicative, or in the Future ; as

Il faut,
Il faudra, } *que je chante.*

416. We must use the Imperfect, the Perfect, and the Pluperfect of the Subjunctive after all the other tenses of the verb by which it is governed.

Il fallait,
Il fallut, } *que je chantasse.*
Il a fallu, *que j'aie chanté.*
Il eut fallu,
Il faudrait, } *que j'eusse chanté.*
Il aurait fallu,

417. The **IMPERATIVE MOOD** commands, entreats, or exhorts ; as, *sois sage*, be wise ; *partons*, let us go ; *allez en paix*, go in peace.

ON TENSES.

Tense signifies the *time* of the verb.

Tenses are denoted by terminations which indicate whether the action or condition relates to the *present*, the *past*, or the *future* time ; so **THAT THERE ARE BUT THREE TENSES**, the Present, the Past, and the Future.

418. The **PRESENT** declares that which is being done at the time we are speaking ; this tense shows that the thing is, or that it is actually being done at the present time ; as, *je marche*, I walk ; *vous marchez*, you walk ; *ils se promènent*, they walk. Thus we know that the verb is in the present tense when we

can add to it with propriety, *à présent*, (now); *aujourd'hui*, (to-day), or some such expression.

419. The PAST speaks of that which has been done previously to the time at which we are speaking.

We know that the verb is in the past when it will make sense with the addition of *hier*, (yesterday), or some equivalent word after it.

420. *The Past may be divided into five different kinds, namely : the Imperfect, the Perfect Definite, the Perfect Indefinite, the Perfect Anterior, and the Pluperfect.*

421. The IMPERFECT points out a past action with relation to the present time, or denotes that a thing was present at a time past ; *je dessinais quand vous arrivâtes*, I was drawing when you arrived.

422. The PERFECT DEFINITE declares a thing done at a particular time past, and of which time nothing more remains to elapse ; as, *Je fus à la campagne hier*, I was in the country yesterday.

423. The PERFECT INDEFINITE indicates a thing done at a time past not specified, or at a particular time, which is not yet quite elapsed ; as, *J'ai vu plusieurs fois le roi*, I have seen the king several times ; *J'ai acheté aujourd'hui, hier, cette année*, I have bought to-day, yesterday, this year.

424. The PERFECT ANTERIOR marks that one thing was done before another, at a time wholly past ; as, *dès que j'eus diné, je partis*, as soon as I had dined, I set off.

425. The PLUPERFECT shows that one thing had been already done, when another thing, also past, was

being done ; as, J'avais diné quand il arriva, I had dined when he arrived.

426. The FUTURE denotes time to come. We know that a verb is in the future when it will make sense with the word *demain*, (to-morrow,) coming after it ; as, *Je partirai demain*, I will set off to-morrow.

427. *There are two kinds of future—the simple, and the compound, or past. The Simple Future shows that a thing is, or will be, done at a time which is not yet come ; as, Le mois prochain je m'embarquerai pour l'Amérique, Next month I will set sail for America. The Compound Future denotes that one thing will be finished when another will take place ; as,*

<i>J'aurai déjeuné quand vous</i>	I shall have breakfasted
<i>viendrez,*</i>	when you come.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

What have you remarked on the tenses ? They are exactly the same as in English, with the exception of the IMPERFECT and PERFECT. How do you know them from each other ? The IMPERFECT expresses a thing past, when another happens. See No. 421. The PERFECT marks a thing totally past. See No. 422. By what is the Present Infinitive governed ? See No. 375.

* We distinguish again two other Futures—the Near Future, which declares an action that will be done from the moment at which we are speaking, as *Je vais danser*, I am going to dance. The future Next Anterior, which marks an action that was about to be done when another had taken place ; as *J'allais danser*, I was going to dance.

TWENTY-FOURTH LESSON.

ON PARTICIPLES.

428. There are two Participles—the Present Participle, and the Past Participle.

429. The PRESENT PARTICIPLE is invariable,* expresses an action, and is always governed by the preposition EN, expressed or understood ; as,

<i>Un homme jouant,</i>	A man playing.
<i>Des hommes jouant,</i>	Men playing.
<i>Une femme jouant,</i>	A woman playing.
<i>Des femmes jouant,</i>	Women playing.
<i>Une femme obligeant son mari de lui obéir,</i>	A woman forcing her husband to obey her.
<i>Je la vis brillant dans une société par les graces de l'esprit,</i>	I saw her shining in a society by the charms of her wit.

430. *Observe.*—There are also verbal adjectives ending in ANT, which must agree with their noun, but they express a state, a condition or habit, have no object, and do not express an action ; as,

<i>Des hommes obligeants,</i>	Obliging men.
<i>Des femmes obligeantes,</i>	Obliging women.
<i>C'est une jeune personne, brillante de santé,</i>	It is a young person blooming with health.

* It is generally believed that it is from the publication of the famous letters of PASCAL in 1659, we must date the epoch when the Present Participle was pronounced invariable. ARNAULD, in his general Grammar, published in 1660, was the first who spoke of the invariability of the present participle, and the concordance of the verbal adjective. The FRENCH ACADEMY, on the 3d of June, 1679, decided that the present participle should no more be declinable.

You see the words *obligeants*, *obligeantes*, and *brillante*, merely qualify the substantive, therefore are adjectives, and agree with the noun to which they are joined.

431. The PARTICIPLE PAST, joined with the verb TO BE, agrees always with the subject or Nominative; as,

<i>Mon père est aimé,</i>	My father is beloved.
<i>Ma mère est aimée,</i>	My mother is beloved.
<i>Mes frères sont aimés,</i>	My brothers are beloved.
<i>Mes sœurs sont aimées,</i>	My sisters are beloved.

432. The Participle Past, joined with the verb TO HAVE, agrees with the object or accusative, ONLY when the object is placed BEFORE the verb. The reflexive verbs follow the same rule.

433. The object or accusative case, is always one of the following pronouns, *me*, *te*, *se*, *nous*, *vous*, *le*, *la*, *les*, and *QUE*, relative pronoun; as,

<i>La maison que j'ai achetée,*</i>	The house which I have bought,
<i>je l'ai vendue,*</i>	I have sold it.
<i>Les maisons que j'ai achetées,*</i>	The houses which I have
<i>je les ai vendues,</i>	bought, I have sold them.
<i>Cette femme s'est voilée,*</i>	This woman has veiled herself.
<i>La lettre que j'ai écrite,</i>	The letter which I have written.
<i>Les lettres que j'ai écrites,</i>	The letters which I have written.
<i>Les poires que nous avons</i>	The pears which we have sent.
<i>envoyées,</i>	

434. But if the object be placed after the verb, the participle is invariable;† as,

* *Achetée, vendue, achetées, vendues, voilée, écrite*, in the feminine, (variable,) because its object, *que, l', les, que, s'*, is placed before.

† Therefore when a phrase presents any difficulty with the past participle, place its object after the verb, and the past participle must be unchangeable.

<i>J'ai acheté* une maison,</i>	I have bought a house.
<i>Nous avons acheté* des maisons,</i>	We have bought houses.
<i>Cette femme s'est voilé* la tête.</i>	This woman has veiled her head.
<i>J'ai écrit* une lettre,</i>	I have written a letter.
<i>J'ai écrit* des lettres,</i>	I have written letters.
<i>Nous avons envoyé des poires,</i>	We have sent pears.

435. *Observe.*—The Participle Past is invariable (though preceded by its object) when followed by a present infinitive, if the object do not perform the action ; as,

<i>Les comédies que j'ai vu† jouer étaient excellentes,</i>	The comedies which I have seen played were excellent.
<i>Les écoliers que j'ai vu† punir étaient paresseux,</i>	The pupils that I have seen punished were idle.
<i>Les châteaux que j'ai fait† construire, sont magnifiques.</i>	The castles that I have caused to be builded are magnificent.

436. *Observe.*—But, if the object perform the action, the participle must agree with it ; as,

<i>Les acteurs sont bons, je les ai vus† jouer,</i>	These actors are good, I have seen them play.
<i>Les écoliers que j'ai vus† jouer, étaient très turbulents,</i>	The pupils that I have seen play, were very noisy.

* *Acheté, acheté, voilé, écrit, envoyé*, masculine singular, (invariable) because their object, *maison, maisons, la tête, lettre, poires*, is placed after them.

† *Vu* is invariable, because comedies cannot play themselves, and the pupils did not punish themselves, therefore the object did not perform the action.

‡ *Vus* in the plural, because the object (*acteurs* or *écoliers*) performs the action, it must agree with it.

MODELS FOR THE SEVERAL MODES OF CONJUGATING
ALL VERBS IN FRENCH.

437. AFFIRMATIVELY.—Place the nominative before the verb, as in English; as,

<i>Je danse,</i>	I dance,
<i>tu dances,</i>	thou dancest,
<i>il danse,</i>	he dances,
<i>Nous dansons,</i>	We dance,
<i>vous dansez,</i>	you dance,
<i>ils dansent,</i>	they dance.
<i>J'ai dansé,</i>	I have danced,
<i>tu as dansé,</i>	thou hast danced,
<i>il a dansé,</i>	he has danced,
<i>Nous avons dansé,</i>	We have danced,
<i>vous avez dansé,</i>	you have danced,
<i>ils ont dansé,</i>	they have danced.

438. NEGATIVELY.—Place the particle *ne* between the nominative and the verb, and either *pas*,* *point*, *jamais*, *rien*, *plus*, *guères*, *goutte*, *nullement*, or *que*, after the verb, as,

<i>Je ne joue pas,</i>	I do not play.
<i>Je ne veux point,</i>	I will not.
<i>Je ne chante jamais,</i>	I never sing.
<i>Je ne vois rien,</i>	I see nothing.
<i>Je ne veux plus,</i>	I will no more.
<i>N'avoir guères,</i>	To have but little.
<i>Il ne voit goutte,</i>	He does not see at all.
<i>Je ne puis nullement,</i>	I cannot at all.
<i>Il ne fait que d'entrer,</i>	He has just come in.
<i>Il ne fait que de sortir,</i>	He has just gone out.

* 439. Before an infinitive we must place both *ne pas*, *ne point*, &c. before the verb; as, *ne pas manger*, not to eat, &c.

MODELS.

<i>Je n'aimais* pas,</i>	I was not loving.
<i>tu n'aimais pas,</i>	Thou wast not loving.
<i>il n'aimait pas,</i>	He was not loving.
<i>Nous n'aimions pas,</i>	We were not loving.
<i>vous n'aimiez pas,</i>	You were not loving.
<i>ils n'aimaient pas,</i>	They were not loving.
<i>Je n'avais pas aimé,</i>	I had not loved.
<i>tu n'avais pas aimé,</i>	Thou hadst not loved.
<i>il n'avait pas aimé,</i>	He had not loved.
<i>Nous n'avions pas aimé,</i>	We had not loved.
<i>vous n'aviez pas aimé,</i>	You had not loved.
<i>ils n'avaient pas aimé,</i>	They had not loved.

440. INTERROGATIVELY.—Place the nominative after the verb, if it be a pronoun ; as,

<i>Est ce que† j'aime ?</i>	Do I love ?
or,	
<i>Aimé je ?‡</i>	Do I love ?
<i>Aimes-tu ?</i>	Dost thou love ?
<i>Aime-t-il ?§</i>	Does he love ?
<i>Aimons-nous ?</i>	Do we love ?
<i>Aimez-vous ?</i>	Do you love ?
<i>Aiment-ils ?</i>	Do they love ?
<i>Est-ce que j'ai aimé,</i>	Have I loved ?
or,	

* All verbs and tenses are conjugated negatively in that manner.

† 441. *Est-ce que*. Interrogative expression, which is translated by *do*.

‡ When the verb ends in *e* mute, it is changed into an *é* sharp only before *je* ; *aime-je* makes *aimé-je*.

§ When the verb ends with a vowel, and that the following words are *il, ils, elle, elles, or on*, we put a *t* between the verb and those pronouns only to prevent the hiatus.

<i>Ai-je aimé ?</i>	Have I loved ?
<i>As-tu aimé ?</i>	Hast thou loved ?
<i>A-t-il aimé ?</i>	Has he loved ?
<i>Avons-nous aimé ?</i>	Have we loved ?
<i>Avez-vous aimé ?</i>	Have you loved ?
<i>Ont-ils aimé ?</i>	Have they loved ?

442. NEGATIVELY AND INTERROGATIVELY.—Place *ne* at the beginning of the sentence, or after the substantive, if there is one, and either *pas*, *point*, *jamais*, or *rien*, &c. after the verb and pronoun ; as,

Est-ce que† je n'aime pas ? Or,

<i>N'aimé-je pas ?</i>	Do I not love ?
<i>N'aimes-tu pas ?</i>	Dost thou not love ?
<i>N'aime-t-il pas ?</i>	Does he not love ?
<i>N'aimons-nous pas ?</i>	Do we not love ?
<i>N'aimez vous pas ?</i>	Do you not love ?
<i>N'aiment-ils pas ?</i>	Do they not love ?

Est-ce que je n'ai pas aimé ? or,

<i>N' ai je pas aimé ?</i>	Have I not loved ?
<i>N' as tu pas aimé ?</i>	Hast thou not loved ?
<i>N' a il pas aimé ?</i>	Has he not loved ?
<i>N'avons nous pas aimé ?</i>	Have we not loved ?
<i>N'avez vous pas aimé ?</i>	Have you not loved ?
<i>N'ont ils pas aimé ?</i>	Have they not loved ?
<i>Mon ami ne va-t-il pas ?</i>	Is my friend not going ?

443. Pronouns governed by the verb are placed before that verb ; as,

<i>Je le or la montre,</i>	I show him or her.
<i>Je* l'ai* montré,</i>	I have shown it.
<i>Je* le lui ai* montré,</i>	I have shown it to him.
<i>Je* les ai* montrés,</i>	I have shown them.
<i>Je* les leur* ai montrés,</i>	I have shown them to them.

* Should the phrase be negative, you will place *ne* where the first (*) is, and *pas* where the second (*) is, as, *Je ne*

444. But not in the imperative affirmative, for then the governed pronouns come after the verb ; as,

<i>Montrez-moi,</i>	Show me.
<i>Montrez-lui,</i>	Show him.
<i>Montrez-nous,</i>	Show us.
<i>Montrez le lui,</i>	Show it to him.
<i>Montrez la lui,</i>	Show her to him.
<i>Montrez les leurs,</i>	Show them to them.

445. REFLECTIVE VERBS take two pronouns before every person ; as,

<i>Je me lève,</i>	I rise myself.
<i>tu te lèves,</i>	Thou risest thyself.
<i>il se lève,</i>	He rises himself.
<i>Nous nous levons,</i>	We rise ourselves.
<i>vous vous levez,</i>	You rise yourself.
<i>ils se lèvent,</i>	They rise themselves.
<i>Je me suis levé,</i>	I have risen myself.
<i>tu t'es levé,</i>	Thou hast risen thyself.
<i>il s'est levé,</i>	He has risen himself.
<i>Nous nous sommes levés,</i>	We have risen ourselves.
<i>vous vous êtes levés,</i>	You have risen yourself.
<i>ils se sont levés,</i>	They have risen themselves.

Their compound tenses are formed with the verb *être* (to be) in French, and *To Have* in English.

446. IMPERSONAL VERBS† have only the third person singular in all the tenses ; their nominative is always *IL* or *CE*.

<i>Il grêle,</i>	it hails.	<i>Il neige,</i>	it snows.
------------------	-----------	------------------	-----------

J'ai pas montré, I have not shown it ; should the phrase be negatively and interrogatively, place the nominative pronoun immediately after the verb, as, *Ne l'ai-je pas montré ?*

* Unipersonal, or Impersonal, signifies that which has only one person, from two Latin words, *unus*, one, and *persona*, person.

<i>C'est,</i>	it is.	<i>Il est,</i>	it is.
<i>Il fait,</i>	it makes.	<i>Il-y-a,</i>	there is, there are.
<i>Il fait du vent,</i>	it is windy.	<i>Il faut,</i>	it is necessary.
<i>Il fait beau,</i>	it is fine.	<i>Il est nécessaire,</i>	it is necessary.
<i>Il pleut,</i>	it rains,	<i>Il importe,</i>	it matters.
<i>Il a plu,</i>	it has rained.	<i>Il arrive,</i>	it happens.
<i>Il dégèle,</i>	it thaws.	<i>Il est arrivé,</i>	it has happened

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY* *AVOIR*.

PRESENT INFINITIVE.

447. *Avoir*,† to Have.

Present Participle,	Past Participle,
<i>ayant</i> , having.	<i>eu</i> ,† m. <i>eue</i> , f. had.
Compound Present,	Compound Participle,
<i>avoir eu</i> , to have had.	<i>ayant eu</i> , having had.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.	
<i>J'ai</i> ,§	I have.	<i>Nous avons</i> ,	We have.
<i>tu as</i> ,	thou hast.	<i>vous avez</i> ,	you have.
<i>il or elle a</i> ,	he or she has.	<i>ils or elles ont</i> ,	they have.

* It is called auxiliary, when it helps to conjugate the other verbs, therefore after the verbs to Have, and to Be, use always the participle past.

<i>J'ai parlé,</i>	I have spoken.
<i>J'avais fini,</i>	I had finished.
<i>Vous auriez aperçu,</i>	You should have perceived.
<i>Qu'ils aient rendu,</i>	That they may have restored.

† The verb *avoir* is only auxiliary when it is followed by the past participle of another verb; otherwise, it is active; as,

<i>J'ai une femme aimable,</i>	I have an amiable wife.
<i>Vous avez des maisons,</i>	You have houses.

‡ *Eu*, through the verb *avoir*, is pronounced *u*.
Je, tu, nous, vous, are for both genders—*il, ils*, for the masculine; *elle, elles*, for the feminine.

§ *J'ai* is pronounced *J'é*.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>J'ai eu</i> ,* I have had.	<i>Nous avons eu</i> ,* we have had.

IMPERFECT.

<i>J'avais</i> ,†	I had.	<i>Nous avions</i> , we had.
<i>tu avais</i> ,	thou hadst.	<i>vous aviez</i> , you had.
<i>il or elle avait</i> ,	he or she had.	<i>ils avaient</i> , they had.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

<i>J'avais eu</i> , I had had.	<i>Nous avions eu</i> ,† we had had.
--------------------------------	--------------------------------------

PERFECT.

<i>J'eus</i> ,	I had.	<i>nous eûmes</i> ,	we had.
<i>tu eus</i> ,	thou hadst.	<i>vous eûtes</i> ,	you had.
<i>il or elle eut</i> ,	he or she had.	<i>ils or elles eurent</i> ,	they had.

COMPOUND PERFECT.

<i>J'eus eu</i> , I had had.	<i>Nous eûmes eu</i> , we had had.
------------------------------	------------------------------------

FUTURE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'aurai</i> ,	I shall or will have,
<i>tu auras</i> ,	thou shalt have,
<i>il or elle aura</i> ,	he or she shall have.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous aurons</i> ,	We shall have,
<i>vous aurez</i> ,	you shall have,
<i>ils or elles auront</i> ,	they shall have.

* *Eu* does not take an *s*, because the participle past, joined with the verb to have, agrees only with its object when it is placed before. See page 119, No. 432.

† *J'avais* is pronounced *J'avè*.

‡ The compound tenses of the verb *avoir* are made with its participle past. We give only the first person, add only *eu* to the present indicative of *avoir*, and you will have the compound present.

COMPOUND FUTURE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'aurai eu,</i>	I shall have had.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous aurons eu,*</i>	We shall have had.

CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'aurais,</i>	I should, or could, have,
<i>tu aurais,</i>	thou should'st have,
<i>il or elle aurait,</i>	he should have.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous aurions,</i>	We should have,
<i>vous auriez,</i>	you should have,
<i>ils or elles auraient,</i>	they should have.

COMPOUND CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'aurais eu,</i>	I should have had.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous aurions eu,*</i>	We should have had.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'aie,</i>	That I may have.
<i>que tu aies,</i>	that thou may'st have.
<i>qu'il or elle ait,</i>	that he may have.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous ayons,</i>	That we may have.
<i>que vous ayez,</i>	that you may have.
<i>qu'ils or elles aient,</i>	that they may have.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'aie eu,</i>	That I may have.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous ayons eu.*</i>	That we may have had.

* See page 119, No. 432.

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'eusse,</i>	That I might have.
<i>que tu eusses,</i>	that thou might'st have.
<i>qu' il or elle eût,*</i>	that he or she might have.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous eussions,</i>	That we might have.
<i>que vous eussiez,</i>	that you might have.
<i>qu' ils or elles eussent,</i>	that they might have.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'eusse eu,</i>	That I may have had.
Plural:	Plural.
<i>Que nous eussions eu,†</i>	That we might have had.

IMPERATIVE.‡

Singular.	Plural.
(The first person.)§ <i>aie, have thou.</i>	<i>Ayons, let us have.</i> <i>ayez, have you.</i>

448. Interrogatively is the same as affirmatively, only place the pronoun after the verb.

The same verb conjugated Interrogatively.

<i>Ai-je ?</i>	Have I ?
<i>As-tu ?</i>	Hast thou ?
<i>A-t-il ?</i>	Has he ?
<i>A-t-elle ?</i>	Has she ?
<i>Avons-nous ?</i>	Have we ?
<i>Avez-vous ?</i>	Have you ?
<i>Ont-ils ?</i>	Have they ?
<i>Ont-elles ?</i>	Have they ?
<i>Mon père a-t-il ?</i>	Has my father ?
<i>Ma mère a-t-elle ?</i>	Has my mother ?
<i>Mes frères ont-ils ?</i>	Have my brothers ?
<i>Mes sœurs ont-elles ?</i>	Have my sisters ?

* The circumflex shows that *s* has been omitted, formerly it was spelled *eust*.

† *Eu*, see page 119, No. 432.

‡ No third persons in the Imperative; for how can one command a person not present ?

§ Is used when commanding oneself.

449. The same verb AVOIR conjugated negatively.

INFINITIVE.

*Ne pas** AVOIR, Not to have.

Present Participle,	<i>N' ayant pas,</i>	Not having.
Past Participle,	<i>Pas eu,</i>	Not had.

INDICATIVE.

<i>Je n' ai</i>	} <i>pas.*</i>	I have not.
<i>Tu n' as</i>		Thou hast not.
<i>Il n' a</i>		He has not.
<i>Nous n' avons</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	We
<i>Vous n' avez</i>		You
<i>Ils n' ont</i>		They

} have not.

IMPERFECT.

<i>Je n' avais</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	I	} had not.
<i>Tu n' avais</i>		Thou	
<i>Il n' avait</i>		He	
<i>Nous n' avions</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	We	}
<i>Vous n' aviez</i>		You	
<i>Ils n' avaient</i>		They	

PERFECT.

<i>Je n' eus</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	I	} had not.
<i>Tu n' eus</i>		Thou	
<i>Il n' eut</i>		He	
<i>Nous n' eûmes</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	We	}
<i>Vous n' eûtes</i>		You	
<i>Ils n' eurent</i>		They	

FUTURE.

<i>Je n' aurai</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	I	} shall, will
<i>Tu n' auras</i>		Thou	
<i>Il n' aura</i>		He	
<i>Nous n' aurons</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	We	} not have.
<i>Vous n' aurez</i>		You	
<i>Ils n' auront</i>		They	

CONDITIONAL.

<i>Je n' aurais</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	I	} should, would
<i>Tu n' aurais</i>		Thou	
<i>Il n' aurait</i>		He	
<i>Nous n' aurions</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	We	} not have.
<i>Vous n' auriez</i>		You	
<i>Ils n' auraient</i>		They	

* *Ne pas* is only placed before the infinitive present; in any other case place *ne* before the verb, and *pas* after.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

<i>Que Je</i>	<i>n' aie</i>		That I		
<i>Tu</i>	<i>n' aies</i>			Thou	
<i>Il</i>	<i>n' ait</i>	} <i>pas.</i>		He	} may not have.
<i>Nous</i>	<i>n' ayons</i>			We	
<i>Vous</i>	<i>n' ayez</i>			You	
<i>Ils</i>	<i>n' aient</i>			They	

IMPERFECT.

<i>Que Je</i>	<i>n' eusse</i>		That I		
<i>Tu</i>	<i>n' eusses</i>			Thou	
<i>Il</i>	<i>n' eût</i>	} <i>pas.</i>		He	} might not have.
<i>Nous</i>	<i>n' eussions</i>			We	
<i>Vous</i>	<i>n' eussiez</i>			You	
<i>Ils</i>	<i>n' eussent</i>			They	

IMPERATIVE.

<i>N' ayez pas,</i>	Have not.
<i>N' ayons pas,</i>	Let us not have.

450. The same verb conjugated negatively and interrogatively.

<i>N' ai-je</i>	} <i>pas ?</i>	Have I	} not ?
<i>N' as-tu</i>		Has thou	
<i>N' a-t-il</i>		Has he	
<i>N' a-t-elle</i>		Has she	
<i>Mon père n' a-t-il pas ?</i>		Has not my father ?	
<i>Ma mère n' a-t-elle pas ?</i>		Has not my mother ?	

PRESENT INFINITIVE.

451. *Etre*,* to be.

Present Participle.

étant, being.

Compound Present.

avoir été,† to have been.

Past Participle.

été, been.†

Compound Participle.

ayant été,† having been.

* 452. The verb *être* forms its compound tenses with *avoir*, and its participle *été*: as, *j'ai été volé*, I have been robbed; *nous avons été volés*, we have been robbed.

† The participle *été* is invariable.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular		Plural	
<i>Je suis,</i>	I am,	<i>Nous sommes,</i>	We are,
<i>tu es,</i>	thou art,	<i>vous êtes,</i>	you are,
<i>il or elle est,</i>	he or she is.	<i>ils or elles sont,</i>	they are.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>J'ai été,*</i> I have been.	<i>Nous avons été,*</i> we have been.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.		Plural.	
<i>J'étais,</i>	I was,	<i>Nous étions,</i>	We were,
<i>tu étais,</i>	thou wast,	<i>vous étiez,</i>	you were,
<i>il or elle était,</i>	he or she was.	<i>ils or elles étaient,</i>	they were.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>J'avais été,</i> I had been.	<i>Nous avions été,*</i> We had been.

PERFECT.

Singular.		Plural.	
<i>Je fus,</i>	I was,	<i>Nous fûmes,</i>	We were,
<i>tu fus,</i>	thou wast,	<i>vous fûtes,</i>	you were,
<i>il or elle fut,</i>	he or she was.	<i>ils or elles furent,</i>	they were.

COMPOUND PERFECT.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>J'eus été,</i> I had been.	<i>Nous eûmes été,*</i> We had been.

FUTURE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Je serai,</i> I shall or will be.	<i>Nous serons,</i> we shall be.
<i>tu seras,</i> thou shalt be.	<i>vous serez,</i> you shall be.
<i>il or elle sera,</i> he or she shall be.	<i>ils or elles seront,</i> they shall be.

* *été* is invariable.

COMPOUND FUTURE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'aurai été,</i>	I shall have been.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous aurons été,*</i>	We shall have been.

CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je serais,</i>	I should, would, or could be.
<i>tu serais,</i>	thou should'st be.
<i>il or elle serait,</i>	he or she should be.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous serions,</i>	We should be.
<i>vous seriez,</i>	You should be.
<i>ils or elles seraient,</i>	They should be.

COMPOUND CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'aurais été,</i>	I should have been.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous aurions été,*</i>	we should have been.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que je sois,</i>	That I may be,
<i>que tu sois,</i>	that thou may'st be,
<i>qu'il or qu'elle soit,</i>	that he or she may be.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous soyons,</i>	That we may be,
<i>que vous soyez,</i>	that you may be,
<i>qu'ils or qu'elles soient,</i>	that they may be.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'aie été,</i>	That I may have been.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous ayons été,*</i>	That we may have been.

* *été* is invariable.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que je fusse,</i>	That I might be,
<i>que tu fusses,</i>	that thou might'st be,
<i>qu'il or qu'elle fût,*</i>	that he or she might be.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous fussions,</i>	That we might be,
<i>que vous fussiez,</i>	that you might be,
<i>qu'ils or qu'elles fussent,</i>	that they might be.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'eusse été,</i>	That I might have been.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous eussions été,†</i>	That we might have been.

IMPERATIVE.‡

Singular.	Plural.
(The first person)	<i>Soyons,</i> Let us be,
<i>Sois,</i> Be thou,	<i>soyez,</i> be you.

453. Interrogatively is the same as affirmatively, only place the pronoun after the verb.

The same verb conjugated Interrogatively.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Suis-je ?</i>	am I ?
<i>es-tu ?</i>	art thou ?
<i>est-il ?</i>	is he ?
<i>mon père est-il ?</i>	is my father ?
<i>ma mère est-elle ?</i>	is my mother ?
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Sommes-nous ?</i>	are we ?
<i>êtes-vous ?</i>	are you ?
<i>sont-ils ?</i>	are they ?
<i>mes frères sont-ils ?</i>	are my brothers ?
<i>mes sœurs sont-elles ?</i>	are my sisters ?

* The circumflex shows that an *s* has been omitted, formerly it was spelled *fust*.

† *été* is invariable.

‡ The first person singular imperative is used when commanding oneself. There is no third person in the Imperative, for how can one command a person not present. N

454. The same verb *être* conjugated negatively.

INFINITIVE.

Ne pas être, Not to be.Present Participle, *N'étant pas*, Not being.Past Participle, *Pas été*, Not been.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

<i>Je ne suis</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	I am not	}	
<i>Tu n' es</i>		Thou art not,		
<i>Il n' est</i>		He is not.		
<i>Nous ne sommes</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	We	}	are not.
<i>Vous n' êtes</i>		You		
<i>Ils ne sont</i>		They		

IMPERFECT.

<i>Je n' étais</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	I	}	was not.
<i>Tu n' étais</i>		Thou		
<i>Il n' était</i>		He		
<i>Nous n' étions</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	We	}	were not.
<i>Vous n' étiez</i>		You		
<i>Ils n' étaient</i>		They		

PERFECT.

<i>Je ne fus</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	I	}	was not.
<i>Tu ne fus</i>		Thou		
<i>Il ne fut</i>		He		
<i>Nous ne fûmes</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	We	}	were not.
<i>Vous ne fûtes</i>		You		
<i>Ils ne furent</i>		They		

FUTURE.

<i>Je</i>	<i>ne serai</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	<i>I</i>	}	shall or will not be.
<i>Tu</i>	<i>ne seras</i>		<i>Thou</i>		
<i>Il</i>	<i>ne sera</i>		<i>He</i>		
<i>Nous</i>	<i>ne serons</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	<i>We</i>	}	
<i>Vous</i>	<i>ne serez</i>		<i>You</i>		
<i>Ils</i>	<i>ne seront</i>		<i>They</i>		

CONDITIONAL.

<i>Je ne serais</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	I	} should or would not be.
<i>Tu ne serais</i>		Thou	
<i>Il ne serait</i>		He	
<i>Nous ne serions</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	We	
<i>Vous ne seriez</i>		You	
<i>Ils ne seraient</i>		They	

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

Que <i>Je</i>	<i>ne sois</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	That <i>I</i>	} may not be.
<i>Tu</i>	<i>ne sois</i>		<i>Thou</i>	
<i>Il</i>	<i>ne soit</i>		<i>He</i>	
<i>Nous</i>	<i>ne soyons</i>		<i>We</i>	
<i>Vous</i>	<i>ne soyez</i>		<i>You</i>	
<i>Ils</i>	<i>ne soient</i>		<i>They</i>	

IMPERFECT.

Que <i>Je</i>	<i>ne fusse</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	That <i>I</i>	} might not be.
<i>Tu</i>	<i>ne fusses</i>		<i>Thou</i>	
<i>Il</i>	<i>ne fût</i>		<i>He</i>	
<i>Nous</i>	<i>ne fussions</i>		<i>We</i>	
<i>Vous</i>	<i>ne fussiez</i>		<i>You</i>	
<i>Ils</i>	<i>ne fussent</i>		<i>They</i>	

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Ne soyez</i>	} <i>pas.</i>	<i>Be not,</i>
<i>Ne soyons</i>		<i>Let us not be.</i>

455. The same verb conjugated negatively and interrogatively.

<i>Ne suis-je</i>	} <i>pas ?</i>	<i>Am I</i>	} not?
<i>N' es-tu</i>		<i>Art thou</i>	
<i>N' est-il</i>		<i>Is he</i>	
<i>N' est-elle</i>		<i>Is she</i>	
<i>Ne sommes-nous</i>	} <i>pas ?</i>	<i>Are we</i>	} not?
<i>N' êtes-vous</i>		<i>Are you</i>	
<i>Ne sont-ils</i>		<i>Are they</i>	
<i>Ne sont-elles</i>		<i>Are they</i>	
<i>Mon père n'est-il pas ?</i>		<i>Is not my father ?</i>	
<i>Ma mère n'est-elle pas ?</i>		<i>Is not my mother ?</i>	
<i>Mes frères ne sont-ils pas ?</i>		<i>Are not my brothers ?</i>	
<i>Mes sœurs ne sont-elles pas ?</i>		<i>Are not my sisters ?</i>	

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

What do you remark on the Past Participle?—The past participle joined to the verb *To Be*, agrees always with the nominative or subject.—(See No. 431). With what does it agree when joined to the verb *To Have*?—It agrees only with the accusative or object.—(See Nos. 432 and 434). Can you use indiscriminately *avoir* or *être* in conjugating

the compound tenses of verbs?—Certainly not; *AVOIR* is used in conjugating its own compound tenses; those of *être*, those of all *active*, *impersonals*, and almost all the *neuter* verbs. *ÊTRE* is employed to make the compound tenses of all the *passive*, the *reflective*, and those of a few *neuter* verbs.

Observe.—The auxiliary *AVOIR* is used with verbs expressing a direct action, and *ÊTRE* a state, except *aller*, *arriver*, and *venir*, which take *être*, though expressing an action.

CONJUGATION OF REGULAR VERBS.

456. Although we have given the Regular Verbs in the table, (p. 165) we will conjugate one of each again with the English.

MODELS FOR VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

457. Every verb of the First Conjugation is conjugated like this one. See for the formation of the tenses the table, p. 165.

PRESENT INFINITIVE.

Parl-er, to Speak.

Present Participle, *Parl-ant*, Speaking.

Past Participle, *Parl-é*, Spoken.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

Je parl-e, I speak,

Nous parl-ons, We speak,

tu parl-es, thou speakest,

vous parl-ez, you speak,

il parl-e, he speaks.

ils parl-ent, they speak.

COMPOUND PRESENT.*

Singular.

Singular.

J'ai parl-é,

I have spoken,

tu as parl-é,

thou hast spoken,

il a parl-é,

he has spoken.

* 458. What do you remark in the compound tenses?—That if I want the compound tense of any verb, I must take the

Plural
*Nous avons parlé,**
vous avez parlé,
ils ont parlé,

Plural
 We have spoken,
 you have spoken,
 they have spoken.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.
Je parl-ais,
tu parl-ais,
il parl-ait,

Singular.
 I was speaking,
 thou wast speaking,
 he was speaking.

Plural.
Nous parl-ions,
vous parl-iez,
ils parl-aient,

Plural.
 We were speaking,
 you were speaking,
 they were speaking.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.
*J'avais parlé,**

Singular.
 I had spoken.

PERFECT.

Singular
Je parl-ai, I spoke,
tu parl-as, thou didst speak,
il parl-a, he spoke,

Plural
Nous parl-âmes, We spoke.
vous parl-âtes, you spoke,
ils parl-èrent, they spoke.

COMPOUND PERFECT.

Singular.
*J'eus parlé,**

Singular.
 I had spoken.

FUTURE.

Singular.
Je parler-ai,
tu parler-as,
il parler-a,

Singular.
 I will speak,
 thou wilt speak,
 he will speak.

Plural.
Nous parler-ons,
vous parler-ez,
ils parler-ont,

Plural.
 We will speak,
 you will speak,
 they will speak.

same tense of the auxiliary, and add to it the past participle of that verb; for example:—Present indicative, *Je parle*, I speak; compound, *J'ai parlé*, I have spoken; imperfect, *Je parlais*, I was speaking; compound, *J'avais parlé*, I had spoken. So ON FOR EVERY TENSE AND VERB.

* Past Participle. See p. 119, No. 432.

COMPOUND FUTURE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'aurai parlé,*</i>	I will have spoken.

CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je parler-ais,</i>	I would speak,
<i>tu parler-as,</i>	thou would'st speak,
<i>il parler-ait,</i>	he would speak.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous parler-ions,</i>	We would speak,
<i>vous parler-iez,</i>	you would speak,
<i>ils parler-aient,</i>	they would speak.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que je parl-e,</i>	That I may speak,
<i>que tu parl-es,</i>	that thou may'st speak,
<i>qu'il parl-e,</i>	that he may speak.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous parl-ions,</i>	That we may speak,
<i>que vous parl-iez,</i>	that you may speak,
<i>qu'ils parl-ent,</i>	that they may speak.

COMPOUND SUBJUNCTIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'aie parlé,*</i>	That I may have spoken.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que je parlas-se,</i>	That I might speak,
<i>que tu parlas-ses,</i>	that thou might'st speak,
<i>qu'il parlâ-t.†</i>	that he might speak.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous parlas-sions,</i>	That we might speak,
<i>que vous parlas-siez,</i>	that you might speak,
<i>qu'ils parlas-sent,</i>	that they might speak.

* Past Participle. See p. 119, No. 432.

† The circumflex shows that an *s* is omitted; formerly it was spelled *parlast*.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'eusse parlé,*</i>	That I might have spoken.

IMPERATIVE.†

Singular.	Plural.
(The first person.†) <i>Parle</i> , Speak thou,	<i>Parlons</i> , Let us speak.
	<i>Parlez</i> , Let ye speak.

459. *Observe*.—Verbs of the first conjugation, though regular according to the table, have some irregularities in the spelling.

460. Verbs ending in *cer*, the *c* of those verbs take a cedilla before *a* and *o*; as, *je commençai*, *nous commençons*. See for model, the verb *commencer*, in the irregular verbs.

461. Verbs ending in the *ger* take an *e* mute after the *g*, before *a* and *o*; as, *je mangeai,‡* (not *mangai*) *nous mangeons* (not *mangons*). See for model the verb *manger*, in the irregular verbs.

462. Verbs ending in *yer* change the *y* into *i* before an *e* mute; as, *j'emploie*, (not *j'employe*); *j'envoie*, (not *j'envoye*); *j'appuie*, (not *j'appuye*). See for model the verb *employer*, in the irregular verbs.

463. Verbs ending in *ier* are all conjugated in the same manner. See for model the verb *prier*, in the irregular verbs.

464. In verbs of the first conjugation (*er*), when two *e* mutes are only separated by a consonant, the first *e*

* Past Participle, see p. 119, No. 432.

† In the imperative the first person singular is used when commanding oneself. There is no third person in the imperative, for how can one command a person not present.

‡ The *e* is only put after the *g*, to show that it is to be pronounced like a *j*; as *mangeai*, pronounced *manjai*; *mangeons*, pronounced *manjon*.

must be marked by a grave accent, ('); *j'achève*, (not *acheve*); *achèverai*, (not *acheverai*). See for model the verb *amener*, in the irregular verbs.

<i>j'achève,</i>	<i>achète,</i>	<i>amène,</i>
<i>tu achèves,</i>	<i>achètes,</i>	<i>amènes,</i>
<i>il achève,</i>	<i>achète,</i>	<i>amène,</i>
<i>nous achevons,*</i>	<i>achetons,*</i>	<i>amenons,*</i>
<i>vous achevez,*</i>	<i>achetez,*</i>	<i>amenez,</i>
<i>ils achèvent,</i>	<i>achètent,</i>	<i>amènent.</i>

465. We must except *appeler* and *jeter*, which double their consonant when the final *e* is mute. See irregular verbs for *appeler*; as,

<i>j'appelle,†</i>	<i>je jette,†</i>
<i>tu appelles,</i>	<i>tu jettes,</i>
<i>il appelle,</i>	<i>il jette,</i>
<i>nous appelons,</i>	<i>nous jetons,</i>
<i>vous appelez,</i>	<i>vous jetez,</i>
<i>ils appellent,</i>	<i>ils jettent.</i>

MODEL FOR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

466. Every verb of the second conjugation is conjugated as this one. For the formation of the tenses see the table, p. 165.

PRESENT INFINITIVE.

Fin-ir, to Finish.

Present Participle, *Finiss-ant*, finishing.

Past Participle, *Fin-i*, finished.

* The penultimate in the first and second persons plural is not changed into an *é* grave, because it is not followed by an *e* mute.

† However, we think that it could not be considered as a mistake to follow the rule, and to write, *j'appèle*, *tu appèles*; *je jète*, *tu jètes*, &c. This manner of spelling would be

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Je fin-is</i> , I finish,	<i>Nous finiss-ons</i> , We finish,
<i>tu fin-is</i> , thou finishest,	<i>vous finiss-ez</i> , you finish,
<i>il fin-it</i> , he finishes.	<i>ils finiss-ent</i> , they finish.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'ai fin-i</i> ,*	I have finished.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je finiss-ais</i> ,	I was finishing,
<i>tu finiss-ais</i> ,	thou wast finishing,
<i>il finiss-ait</i> ,	he was finishing.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous finiss-ions</i> ,	We were finishing,
<i>vous finiss-iez</i> ,	you were finishing,
<i>ils finiss-aient</i> ,	they were finishing.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'avais fini</i> ,*	I had finished.

PERFECT.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Je fin-is</i> , I did finish,	<i>Nous fin-îmes</i> , We did finish,
<i>tu fin-is</i> , thou did'st finish,	<i>vous fin-îtes</i> , you did finish,
<i>il fin-it</i> , he did finish.	<i>ils fin-irent</i> , they did finish.

COMPOUND PERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'eus fini</i> ,*	I had finished.

better, especially for the pronunciation; for no one can give any reason why they do not follow the rule. See *appeler* and *jeter*, which are conjugated in the irregular verbs.

* Past Participle. See p. 119, No. 432.

FUTURE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je finir-ai,</i>	I will or shall finish,
<i>tu finir-as,</i>	thou wilt or shall finish,
<i>il finir-a,</i>	he will or shall finish.
Plural:	Plural.
<i>Nous finir-ons,</i>	We will or shall finish,
<i>vous finir-ez,</i>	you will or shall finish,
<i>ils finir-ont,</i>	they will or shall finish.

COMPOUND FUTURE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'aurai fini,*</i>	I will have finished.

CONDITIONAL.

Singular:	Singular.
<i>Je finir-ais,</i>	I would finish,
<i>tu finir-ais,</i>	thou would'st finish,
<i>il finir-ait,</i>	he would finish.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous finir-ions,</i>	We would finish,
<i>vous finir-iez,</i>	you would finish,
<i>ils finir-aient,</i>	they would finish.

COMPOUND CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'aurai fin-i,*</i>	I would have finished.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que je finisse,</i>	That I may finish.
<i>que tu finiss-es,</i>	that thou may'st finish.
<i>qu'il finiss-e,</i>	that he may finish.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous finiss-ions,</i>	That we may finish.
<i>que vous finiss-iez,</i>	that you may finish.
<i>qu' ils finiss-ent,</i>	that they may finish.

* Past Participle. See p. 119, No. 432.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'aie fini,</i>	That I may have finished.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que je finis-se,</i>	That I might finish.
<i>que tu finis-ses,</i>	that thou might finish.
<i>qu'il fint-t,*</i>	that he might finish.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous finis-sions,</i>	That we might finish.
<i>que vous finis-siez,</i>	that you might finish.
<i>qu'ils finis-sent,</i>	that they might finish.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'eusse fini,</i>	That I might have finished.

IMPERATIVE.†

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Finis,</i> finish thou.	<i>Finissons,</i> let us finish.
	<i>finissez,</i> finish ye.

MODEL FOR THE VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

467. There are only thirty-three verbs in the Third Conjugation, which have all some irregularities; however, we give one here, as some of its tenses are regular. For the formation of tenses see the table, page 165.

PRESENT INFINITIVE.

Aperc-evoir, to perceive.

Present Participle.	Past Participle.
<i>Aperc-ant,</i> perceiving.	<i>Aperc-u,</i> perceived.

* The circumflex shows that an *s* has been omitted; formerly it was spelled *finist*.

† There is no third person in the imperative; for how can one command a person not present.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>J'aperçois</i> , I perceive.	<i>Nous apercevons</i> , we perceive.
<i>tu aperçois</i> , thou perceivest.	<i>vous apercevez</i> , you perceive.
<i>il aperçoit</i> , he perceives.	<i>ils aperçoivent</i> , they perceive.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'ai aperçu</i> ,	I have perceived.

IMPERFECT.*

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'apercevais</i> ,	I was perceiving.
<i>tu apercevais</i> ,	thou wast perceiving.
<i>il apercevait</i> ,	he was perceiving.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous apercevions</i> ,	We were perceiving.
<i>vous aperceviez</i> ,	You were perceiving.
<i>ils apercevaient</i> ,	they were perceiving.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'avais aperçu</i> , †	I had perceived.

PERFECT.*

Singular.	Plural.
<i>J'aperçus</i> , I perceived.	<i>Nous aperçûmes</i> , we perceived.
<i>tu aperçus</i> , thou perceived'st.	<i>vous aperçûtes</i> , you perceived.
<i>il aperçut</i> , he perceived.	<i>ils aperçurent</i> , they perceived.

COMPOUND PERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'eus aperçu</i> , †	I had perceived.

FUTURE.*

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'apercevrai</i> ,	I will or shall perceive.
<i>tu apercevras</i> ,	thou wilt or shalt perceive.
<i>il apercevra</i> ,	he will or shall perceive.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous apercevrons</i> ,	We will or shall perceive.
<i>vous apercevrez</i> ,	you will or shall perceive.
<i>ils apercevront</i> ,	they will or shall perceive.

* This tense is regular.

† Past Participle. See p. 119, No. 432

COMPOUND FUTURE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>j'aurai aperçu.</i>	I will have perceived.

CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'apercev-rai,</i>	I would perceive.
<i>tu apercev-rai,</i>	thou would'st perceive.
<i>il apercev-rait,</i>	he would perceive.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous apercev-rions,</i>	We would perceive.
<i>vous apercev-riez,</i>	you would perceive.
<i>ils apercev-raient,</i>	they would perceive.

COMPOUND CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'aurais aperçus,</i>	I would have perceived.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'aperçoiv-e,</i>	That I may perceive.
<i>que tu aperçoiv-es,</i>	that thou may'st perceive.
<i>qu'il aperçoiv-e,</i>	that he may perceive.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous apercev-ions,</i>	That we may perceive.
<i>que vous apercev-iez,</i>	that you may perceive.
<i>qu'ils aperçoiv-ent,</i>	that they may perceive.

COMPOUND PRESENT,

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'aie aperç-u,</i>	That I may have perceived.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'aperçus-se,</i>	That I might perceive.
<i>que tu aperçus-ses,</i>	that thou might perceive.
<i>qu'il aperçû-t,*</i>	that he might perceive.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous aperçus-sions,</i>	That we might perceive.
<i>que vous aperçus-siez,</i>	that you might perceive.
<i>qu'ils aperçus-sent,</i>	that they might perceive.

* The circumflex shows that an *s* has been omitted, formerly it was spelled *apercust*.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'eusse aperç-u,</i>	That I might have perceived.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.*

Singular.	Plural.
	<i>Apercevons,</i> Let us perceive.
<i>Aperçois,</i> Perceive thou.	<i>apercevez,</i> perceive ye.

MODEL FOR VERBS OF THE FOURTH
CONJUGATION.

468. Every verb of the Fourth Conjugation is conjugated as this one. See for the formation of the tenses the table, p. 165.

PRESENT INFINITIVE.

Rendre, To restore.

Present Participle, *Rend-ant,* restoring.

Past Participle, *Rend-u,* restored.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Je rend-s,</i> I restore.	<i>Nous rend-ons,</i> We restore.
<i>tu rend-s,</i> thou restorest.	<i>vous rend-ez,</i> you restore.
<i>il rend,</i> he restores.	<i>ils rend-ent,</i> they restore.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'ai rend-u,</i>	I have restored.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je rend-ais,</i>	I was restoring.
<i>tu rend-ais,</i>	thou wast restoring.
<i>il rend-ait,</i>	he was restoring.

* There are no third persons in the imperative, for how can one command a person not present.

Plural.
Nous rend-ions,
vous rend-iez,
ils rend-aient,

Plural.
 We were restoring.
 you were restoring.
 they were restoring.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.
J'avais rend-u,

Singular.
 I had restored.

PERFECT.

Singular.
Je rend-is, I restored.
tu rend-is, thou restored.
il rend-it, he restored.

Plural.
Nous rend-imes, We restored.
vous rend-ites you restored.
ils rend-irent, they restored.

COMPOUND PERFECT.

Singular.
J'eus rend-u,

Singular.
 I had restored.

FUTURE.

Singular.
Je rendr-ai,
tu rendr-as,
il rendr-a,

Singular.
 I will restore.
 thou wilt restore.
 he will restore.

Plural.
Vous rendr-ons,
vous rendr-ez,
ils rendr-ont,

Plural.
 We will restore.
 you will restore.
 they will restore.

COMPOUND FUTURE.

Singular.
J'aurai rendu,

Singular.
 I will have restored.

CONDITIONAL.

Singular.
Je rendr-ais,
tu rendr-ais,
il rendr-ait,

Singular.
 I would restore.
 thou would'st restore.
 he would restore.

Plural.
Nous rendr-ions,
vous rendr-iez,
ils rendr-aient,

Plural.
 We would restore.
 you would restore.
 they would restore.

CONJUGATION OF

COMPOUND CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>J'aurais rend-u,</i>	I would have restored.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que je rend-e,</i>	That I may restore.
<i>que tu rend-es,</i>	that thou may'st restore.
<i>qu'il rend-e,</i>	that he may restore.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous rend-ions,</i>	That we may restore.
<i>que vous rend-iez,</i>	that you may restore.
<i>qu'ils rend-ent,</i>	that they may restore.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'aie rend-u,</i>	That I may have restored.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que je rendis-se,</i>	That I might restore.
<i>que tu rendis-ses,</i>	that thou might'st restore.
<i>qu'il rendit-t,*</i>	that he might restore.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous rendis-sions,</i>	That we might restore.
<i>que vous rendis-siez,</i>	that you might restore.
<i>qu'ils rendis-sent,</i>	that they might restore.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que j'eusse rend-u,</i>	That I may have restored.

IMPERATIVE.†

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Rends, Restore thou.</i>	<i>Rendons, Let us restore.</i>
	<i>Rendez, Restore ye.</i>

* The circumflex shows that an *s* has been omitted; it was spelled formerly *rendist*.

† There is no third person in the imperative, for how can one command a person not present.

MODEL FOR CONJUGATING VERBS NEGATIVELY.

469.—*PARLER*.

PRESENT INFINITIVE.

*Ne pas parler,** Not to speak.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

N'avoir pas parlé, Not to have spoken.

Present Participle, *Ne parlant pas,* Not speaking.

Compound Present, *N'ayant pas parlé,* Not having spoken.

Past Participle cannot be used negatively.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Je ne parle pas,
tu ne parles pas,
il ne parle pas,

Singular.

I do not speak.
thou dost not speak.
he does not speak.

Plural.

Nous ne parlons pas,
vous ne parlez pas,
ils ne parlent pas,

Plural.

We do not speak.
you do not speak.
they do not speak.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.

Je n'ai pas parlé,

Singular.

I have not spoken.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.

Je ne parlais pas,
tu ne parlais pas,
il ne parlait pas,

Singular.

I was not speaking.
thou wast not speaking.
he was not speaking.

Plural.

Nous ne parlions pas,
vous ne parliez pas,
ils ne parlaient pas,

Plural.

We were not speaking.
you were not speaking.
they were not speaking.

* *NE PAS* is only placed before the present infinitive; in any other tense place *NE* before the verb, and *PAS* after.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je n'avais pas parlé,</i>	I had not spoken.

PERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je ne parlai pas,</i>	I did not speak.
<i>tu ne parlas pas,</i>	thou didst not speak.
<i>il ne parlas pas,</i>	he did not speak.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous ne parlâmes pas,</i>	We did not speak.
<i>vous ne parlâtes pas,</i>	you did not speak.
<i>ils ne parlèrent pas,</i>	they did not speak.

COMPOUND PERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je n'eus pas parlé,</i>	I had not spoken.

FUTURE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je ne parlerai pas,</i>	I shall not speak.
<i>tu ne parleras pas,</i>	thou shalt not speak.
<i>il ne parlera pas,</i>	he shall not speak.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous ne parlerons pas,</i>	We shall not speak.
<i>vous ne parlerez pas,</i>	you shall not speak.
<i>ils ne parleront pas,</i>	they shall not speak.

COMPOUND FUTURE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je n'aurais pas parlé,</i>	I shall not have spoken.

CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je ne parlerais pas,</i>	I should not speak.
<i>tu ne parlerais pas,</i>	thou should'st not speak.
<i>il ne parlerait pas,</i>	he should not speak.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous ne parlerions pas,</i>	We should not speak.
<i>vous ne parleriez pas,</i>	you should not speak.
<i>ils ne parleraient pas,</i>	they should not speak.

COMPOUND CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je n'aurais pas parlé,</i>	I should not have spoken.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que je ne parle pas,</i>	That I may not speak.
<i>que tu ne parles pas,</i>	that thou may'st not speak.
<i>qu'il ne parle pas,</i>	that he may not speak.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous ne parlions pas,</i>	That we may not speak.
<i>que vous ne parliez pas,</i>	that you may not speak.
<i>qu'ils ne parlent pas,</i>	that they may not speak.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que je n'aie pas parlé,</i>	That I may not have spoken.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que je ne parlasse pas,</i>	That I might not speak.
<i>que tu ne parlasses pas,</i>	that thou might'st not speak.
<i>qu'il ne parlât pas,</i>	that he might not speak.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Que nous ne parlussions pas,</i>	That we might not speak.
<i>que vous ne parlassiez pas,</i>	that you might not speak.
<i>qu'ils ne parlassent pas,</i>	that they might not speak.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que je n'eusse pas parlé,</i>	That I might not have spoken.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Ne parle pas,</i>	Do not thou speak.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Ne parlons pas,</i>	Let us not speak.
<i>Ne parlez pas,</i>	Do not ye speak.

MODEL FOR CONJUGATING VERBS INTERROGATIVELY.

470.—*PARLER*, conjugated interrogatively.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Parlé-je ?*</i>	Do I speak ?
<i>parles-tu ?</i>	dost thou speak ?
<i>parle-t-il ?*</i>	does he speak ?
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Parlons-nous ?</i>	Do we speak ?
<i>parlez-vous ?</i>	do you speak ?
<i>parlent-ils ?</i>	do they speak ?

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Ai-je parlé ?</i>	Have I spoken ?

IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Parlais-je ?</i>	Was I speaking ?
<i>parlais-tu ?</i>	wast thou speaking ?
<i>parlait-il ?</i>	was he speaking ?
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Parlions-nous ?</i>	Were we speaking ?
<i>parliez-vous ?</i>	were you speaking ?
<i>parlaient-ils ?</i>	were they speaking ?

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Avais-je parlé ?</i>	Had I spoken ?

PERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Parlai-je ?</i>	Did I speak ?
<i>parlas-tu ?</i>	didst thou speak ?
<i>parla-t-il ?*</i>	did he speak ?
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Parlâmes-nous ?</i>	Did we speak ?
<i>parlâtes-vous ?</i>	did you speak ?
<i>parlèrent-ils ?</i>	did they speak ?

COMPOUND PERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Eus-je parlé ?</i>	Had I spoken ?

* See notes (†) (§) page 122.

FUTURE.

Singular.
Parlerai-je ?
parleras-tu ?
parlera-t-il ?

Plural.
Parlerons-nous ?
parlerez-vous ?
parleront-ils ?

Singular.
 Shall I speak ?
 shalt thou speak ?
 shall he speak ?

Plural.
 Shall we speak ?
 shall you speak ?
 shall they speak ?

COMPOUND FUTURE.

Singular.
Aurai-je parlé ?

Singular.
 Shall I have spoken ?

CONDITIONAL.

Singular.
Parlerais-je ?
Parlerais-tu ?
Parlerait-il ?

Plural.
Parlerions-nous ?
parleriez-vous ?
parleraient-ils ?

Singular.
 Should I speak ?
 should'st thou speak ?
 should he speak ?

Plural.
 Should we speak ?
 should you speak ?
 should they speak ?

COMPOUND CONDITIONAL.

Singular.
Aurais-je parlé ?

Singular.
 Should I have spoken.

The Subjunctive not used interrogatively.

MODEL FOR CONJUGATING VERBS NEGATIVELY AND INTERROGATIVELY.

471.—*PARLER*, conjugated negatively and interrogatively
at once.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular.
Ne parlé-je pas ?
ne parles-tu pas ?
ne parle-t-il pas ?

Plural.
Ne parlons-nous pas ?
ne parlez-vous pas ?
ne parlent-ils pas ?

Singular.
 Do I not speak ?
 dost thou not speak ?
 does he not speak ?

Plural.
 Do we not speak ?
 do you not speak ?
 do they not speak ?

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>N'ai-je pas parlé ?</i>	Have I not spoken ?

IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Ne parlais-je pas ?</i>	Was I not speaking ?
<i>ne parlais-tu pas ?</i>	wast thou not speaking ?
<i>ne parlait-il pas ?</i>	was he not speaking ?
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Ne parlions-nous pas ?</i>	Were we not speaking ?
<i>ne parliez-vous pas ?</i>	were you not speaking ?
<i>ne parlaient-ils pas ?</i>	were they not speaking ?

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>N'avais-je pas parlé ?</i>	Had I not spoken ?

PERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Ne parlai-je pas ?</i>	Did I not speak ?
<i>ne parlas-tu pas ?</i>	didst thou not speak ?
<i>ne parla-t-il pas ?</i>	did he not speak ?
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Ne parlâmes-nous pas ?</i>	Did we not speak ?
<i>ne parlâtes-vous pas ?</i>	did you not speak ?
<i>ne parlèrent-ils pas ?</i>	did they not speak ?

COMPOUND PERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>N'eus-je pas parlé ?</i>	Had I not spoken ?

FUTURE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Ne parlerai-je pas ?</i>	Shall I not speak ?
<i>ne parleras-tu pas ?</i>	shalt thou not speak ?
<i>ne parlera-t-il pas ?</i>	shall he not speak ?
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Ne parlerons-nous pas ?</i>	Shall we not speak ?
<i>ne parlerez-vous pas ?</i>	shall you not speak ?
<i>ne parleraient-ils pas ?</i>	shall they not speak ?

COMPOUND FUTURE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>N'aurai-je pas parlé ?</i>	Shall I not have spoken ?

CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Ne parlerais-je pas ?</i>	Should I not speak ?
<i>ne parlerais-tu pas ?</i>	should'st thou not speak ?
<i>ne parlerait-il pas ?</i>	should he not speak ?
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Ne parlerions-nous pas ?</i>	Should we not speak ?
<i>ne parleriez-vous pas ?</i>	should you not speak ?
<i>ne parleraient-ils pas ?</i>	should they not speak ?

COMPOUND CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>N'aurais-je pas parlé ?</i>	Should I not have spoken ?

The Subjunctive not used Interrogatively.

MODEL FOR CONJUGATING REFLECTIVE VERBS AFFIRMATIVELY.

INFINITIVE.

472.	<i>Se Blâmer,</i>	To blame oneself.
Present Participle,	<i>Se Blâmant,</i>	Blaming oneself.
	(No Past Participle.)	

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je me blâme,</i>	I blame myself.
<i>Tu te blâmes,</i>	Thou blamest thyself.
<i>Il se blâme,</i>	He blames himself.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous nous blâmons,</i>	We blame ourselves.
<i>Vous vous blâmez,</i>	You blame yourselves.
<i>Ils se blâment,</i>	They blame themselves.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je me suis blâmé,</i>	I have blamed myself.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je me blâmais,</i>	I was blaming myself.
<i>Tu te blâmais,</i>	Thou wast blaming thyself.
<i>Il se blâmait,</i>	He was blaming himself.

Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous nous blâmions,</i>	We were blaming ourselves.
<i>Vous vous blâmiez,</i>	You were blaming yourselves.
<i>Ils se blâmaient,</i>	They were blaming themselves.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je m'étais blâmé,</i>	I had blamed myself.

PERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je me blâmai,</i>	I blamed myself.
<i>Tu te blâmas,</i>	Thou blamed thyself.
<i>Il se blâma,</i>	He blamed himself.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous nous blâmâmes,</i>	We blamed ourselves.
<i>Vous vous blâmâtes,</i>	Ye blamed yourselves.
<i>Ils se blâmèrent,</i>	They blamed themselves.

COMPOUND PERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je me fus blâmé,</i>	I had blamed myself.

FUTURE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je me blâmerai,</i>	I shall blame myself.
<i>Tu te blâmeras,</i>	Thou shalt blame thyself.
<i>Il se blâmera,</i>	He shall blame himself.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous nous blâmerons,</i>	We shall blame ourselves.
<i>Vous vous blâmerez,</i>	You shall blame yourselves.
<i>Il se blâmeront,</i>	They shall blame themselves.

COMPOUND FUTURE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je me serai blâmé,</i>	I shall have blamed myself.

CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je me blâmerais,</i>	I should blame myself.
<i>Tu te blâmerais,</i>	Thou shouldst blame thyself.
<i>Il se blâmerait,</i>	He should blame himself.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous nous blâmerions,</i>	We should blame ourselves.
<i>Vous vous blâmeriez,</i>	Ye should blame yourselves.
<i>Ils se blâmeraient,</i>	They should blame themselves.

COMPOUND CONDITIONAL.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Je me serais blâmé,</i>	I should have blamed myself.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que Je me blâme,</i>	That I may blame myself.
<i>Tu te blâmes,</i>	Thou mayest blame thyself.
<i>Il se blâme,</i>	He may blame himself.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous nous blâmions,</i>	We may blame ourselves.
<i>Vous vous blâmiez,</i>	You may blame yourselves.
<i>Ils se blâment,</i>	They may blame themselves.

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Que Je me blâmasse,</i>	That I might blame myself.
<i>Tu te blâmasses,</i>	Thou mightest blame thyself.
<i>Il se blâmât,</i>	He might blame himself.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous nous blâmassions,</i>	We might blame ourselves.
<i>Vous vous blâmassiez,</i>	You might blame yourselves.
<i>Ils se blâmassent,</i>	They might blame themselves.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>blâme-toi,</i>	blame thyself.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>blâmons-nous,</i>	let us blame ourselves.
<i>blâmez-vous,</i>	blame yourself.
Singular.	Singular.
<i>ne te blâme pas,</i>	do not blame thyself.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>ne nous blâmons pas,</i>	let us not blame ourselves.
<i>ne vous blâmez pas,</i>	do not blame yourself.

MODEL FOR CONJUGATING REFLECTIVE VERBS NEGATIVELY.

473.—*SE RENDRE*, conjugated negatively.

PRESENT INFINITIVE.

Ne pas me rendre*, Not to surrender myself.

Ne pas te rendre, Not to surrender thyself.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Ne m'être pas rendu, Not to have surrendered myself.

Ne t'être pas rendu, Not to have surrendered thyself.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Ne me rendant pas, Not surrendering myself.

Ne te rendant pas, Not surrendering thyself.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Ne m'étant pas rendu, Not having surrendered myself.

Ne t'étant pas rendu, Not having surrendered thyself.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Je ne me rends pas,
tu ne te rends pas,
il ne se rend pas,

Singular.

I do not surrender myself.
thou dost not surrender thyself.
he does not surrender himself.

Plural.

Nous ne nous rendons pas,
vous ne vous rendez pas,
ils ne se rendent pas,

Plural.

We do not surrender ourselves.
you do not surrender yourselves.
they do not surrender themselves.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.

Je ne me suis pas rendu,

Singular.

I have not surrendered myself.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.

Je ne me rendais pas,
tu ne te rendais pas,
il ne se rendait pas,

Singular.

I was not surrendering myself.
thou wast not surrendering thyself.
he was not surrendering himself.

* See note, page 121, No. 439.

Plural.

Nous ne nous rendions pas, We were not surrendering ourselves
vous ne vous rendiez pas, you were not surrendering yourselves.

ils ne se rendaient pas, they were not surrendering themselves.

Plural.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.

Je ne m'étais pas rendu, I had not surrendered myself.

Singular.

PERFECT.

Singular.

Je ne me rendis pas, I did not surrender myself.
tu ne te rendis pas, thou didst not surrender thyself.
il ne se rendit pas, he did not surrender himself.

Singular.

Plural.

Nous ne nous rendîmes pas, We did not surrender ourselves.
vous ne vous rendîtes pas, you did not surrender yourselves.
ils ne se rendirent pas, they did not surrender themselves.

Plural.

COMPOUND PERFECT.

Singular.

Je ne me fus pas rendu, I had not surrendered myself.

Singular.

FUTURE.

Singular.

Je ne me rendrai pas, I shall not surrender myself.
tu ne te rendras pas, thou shalt not surrender thyself.
il ne se rendra pas, he shall not surrender himself.

Singular.

Plural.

Nous ne nous rendrons pas, We shall not surrender ourselves.
vous ne vous rendrez pas, you shall not surrender yourselves.
ils ne se rendront pas, they shall not surrender themselves.

Plural.

COMPOUND FUTURE.

Singular.

Je ne me serai pas rendu, I shall not have surrendered myself.

Singular.

CONDITIONAL.

Singular.

Je ne me rendrais pas, I should not surrender myself.
tu ne te rendrais pas, thou shouldst not surrender thyself.
il ne se rendrait pas, he should not surrender himself.

Singular.

Plural.

Nous ne nous rendrions pas, We should not surrender ourselves.
vous ne vous rendriez pas, you should not surrender yourselves.
ils ne se rendraient pas, they should not surrender themselves.

Plural.

COMPOUND CONDITIONAL.

Singular :

Singular.

Je ne me serais pas rendu, I should not have surrendered myself.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Singular.

Que je ne me rende pas, That I may not surrender myself.
que tu ne te rendes pas, that thou may'st not surrender thyself.

qu'il ne se rende pas, that he may not surrender himself.

Plural.

Plural.

Que nous ne nous rendions That we may not surrender ourselves.
pas,

que vous ne vous rendiez that you may not surrender yourselves.
pas,

qu'ils ne se rendent pas, that they may not surrender themselves.

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.

Singular.

Que je ne me sois pas rendu, That I may not have surrendered myself.

IMPERFECT.

Singular.

Singular.

Que je ne me rendisse pas, That I might not surrender myself.
que tu ne te rendisses pas, that thou might'st not surrender thyself.

qu'il ne se rendît pas, that he might not surrender himself.

Plural.

Plural.

Que nous ne nous rendis- That we might not surrender our-
sions pas, selves.

que vous ne vous rendis- that you might not surrender your-
siez pas, selves.

qu'ils ne se rendissent pas, that they might not surrender themselves.

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.

Singular.

Que je ne me fusse pas That I might not have surrendered
rendu, myself.

IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Ne te rends pas,</i>	Do not surrender thyself.
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Ne nous rendons pas,</i>	Let us not surrender ourselves.
<i>Ne vous rendez pas,</i>	Do not surrender yourselves.

MODEL FOR CONJUGATING REFLECTIVE
VERBS INTERROGATIVELY.474.—*SE RENDRE.*

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Est-ce que je me rends ?*</i>	Do I surrender myself ?
<i>te rends-tu ?</i>	dost thou surrender thyself ?
<i>se rend-il ?</i>	does he surrender himself ?
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous rendons-nous ?</i>	Do we surrender ourselves ?
<i>vous rendez-vous ?</i>	do you surrender yourselves ?
<i>se rendent-ils ?</i>	do they surrender themselves ?

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Me suis-je rendu ?</i>	Have I surrendered myself ?

IMPERFECT.

Singular.	Singular.
<i>Me rendais-je ?</i>	Was I surrendering myself ?
<i>te rendais-tu ?</i>	wast thou surrendering thyself ?
<i>se rendait-il ?</i>	was he surrendering himself ?
Plural.	Plural.
<i>Nous rendions-nous ?</i>	Were we surrendering ourselves ?
<i>vous rendiez-vous ?</i>	were you surrendering yourselves ?
<i>se rendaient-ils ?</i>	were they surrendering themselves ?

* When the verb has only one syllable in the present indicative, it is better to use the idiomatical interrogative phrase—*Est-ce que ?* instead of the simple verb, as, *Me rends-je ?* Do I surrender myself ? better, *Est-ce que je me rends ?* Do I surrender myself ?

COMPOUND IMPERFECT.

Singular.

Singular.

M'étais-je rendu ?

Had I surrendered myself ?

So on for every tense and verb.

MODEL FOR CONJUGATING REFLECTIVE VERBS,
NEGATIVELY AND INTERROGATIVELY.475.—*SE RENDRE.*

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Singular.

Est-ce que je ne me rends Do I not surrender myself ?*
*pas ?**ne te rends-tu pas ?*

dost thou not surrender thyself ?

ne se rend-il pas ?

does he not surrender himself ?

Plural.

Plural.

*ne nous rendons-nous pas ? do we not surrender ourselves ?**ne vous rendez-vous pas ? do you not surrender yourselves ?**ne se rendent-ils pas ? do they not surrender themselves ?*

COMPOUND PRESENT.

Singular.

Singular.

Ne me suis-je pas rendu ? Have I not surrendered myself ?

So on for every tense and verb.

MODEL FOR CONJUGATING PASSIVE
VERBS.

PRESENT INFINITIVE.

Etre aimé† ou aimée, To be loved.

Present Participle,

Etant aimé ou aimée, Being loved.

Compound Present,

Ayant été aimé ou aimée, Having been loved.

Past Participle,

Avoir été aimé ou aimée, To have been loved.

* See Note (*) page 161.

† Past Participle, joined with the verb to be, always agrees with its nominative or subject.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Singular.

*Je suis aimé ou aimée,
tu es aimé ou aimée,
il ou elle est aimé ou aimée,*

Plural.

*Nous sommes aimés ou aimées,
vous êtes aimés ou aimées,
ils ou elles sont aimés ou aimées,*

Singular.

I am loved.
Thou art loved.
He or she is loved.

Plural.

We are loved.
You are loved.
They are loved.

So on for every tense and verb.

QUESTIONS FOR THE PUPILS.

Tell me how many verbs there are in the FRENCH LANGUAGE? About 3,683. How many in the first conjugation? 3,000, all regular but 2, *aller* and *envoyer*. How many in the 2nd and 4th conjugation? 650; when any of them has an irregularity it is given in the alphabetical list of the irregular verbs. How many in the third conjugation? 33, which are all irregular; therefore all given in the list of the irregular verbs. How are the compound tenses formed? With the auxiliaries; see page 136, No. 456. When do you use *AVOIR* or *ETRE*? *AVOIR* is used to help to conjugate verbs, when the ACTION expressed by them, is the chief idea we have in view; as *J'AI DORMI PENDANT DEUX HEURES*, I have slept during two hours. *ETRE* is used when the verb expresses a state; as, *JE SUIS BIEN ENDORMI*, I am very sleepy. The verbs of the first conjugation ending in *CER, GER, IER, YER, EVER, ETRE, ENER*, can they be considered as irregular verbs? No, for they have no irregularity in their terminations; see page 139, from No. 457-463. When do you place *NE PAS, NE POINT, &c.* before the verb? Only before the Present Infinitive; in any other tense place *NE* before, and *pas, point, &c.* after the verb; see page 121, No. 438. The Past participle is always placed after *pas, point, &c.* as *Je n' avais pas AIMÉ*. Why in *AIMÉ-Je? parlé-Je? aime-t-il? a-t-il?* &c. do you accentuate the (é) or introduce a (t)? Only for the sake of the sound; see page 122, No. 440, and notes (†, §.). What persons has the Imperative? 1st and 2d persons, singular and plural. Do you use the first person singular? Yes, when commanding oneself. Is there IN FRENCH a 3rd person? No; for how can one command an individual not present.

REMARK.

THE OPPOSITE SYNOPTICAL TABLE
SHOWS THE CONJUGATIONS OF ALL
VERBS IN THE FRENCH LANGUAGE,
NAMELY, **3,683.**

The Terminations, which are printed in

RED INK,

ARE ALWAYS REGULAR.

When there is an irregularity in any **Person**, or **Tense**, which is always in the root of the verb, it is given in the Alphabetical List of the Irregular Verbs, commencing page 167.

There are 3,000* Verbs of the 1st Conjugation.

„	650†	„	„	2nd & 4th Conjugation.
„	33‡	„	„	3rd Conjugation.

Total, 3,683 Verbs.

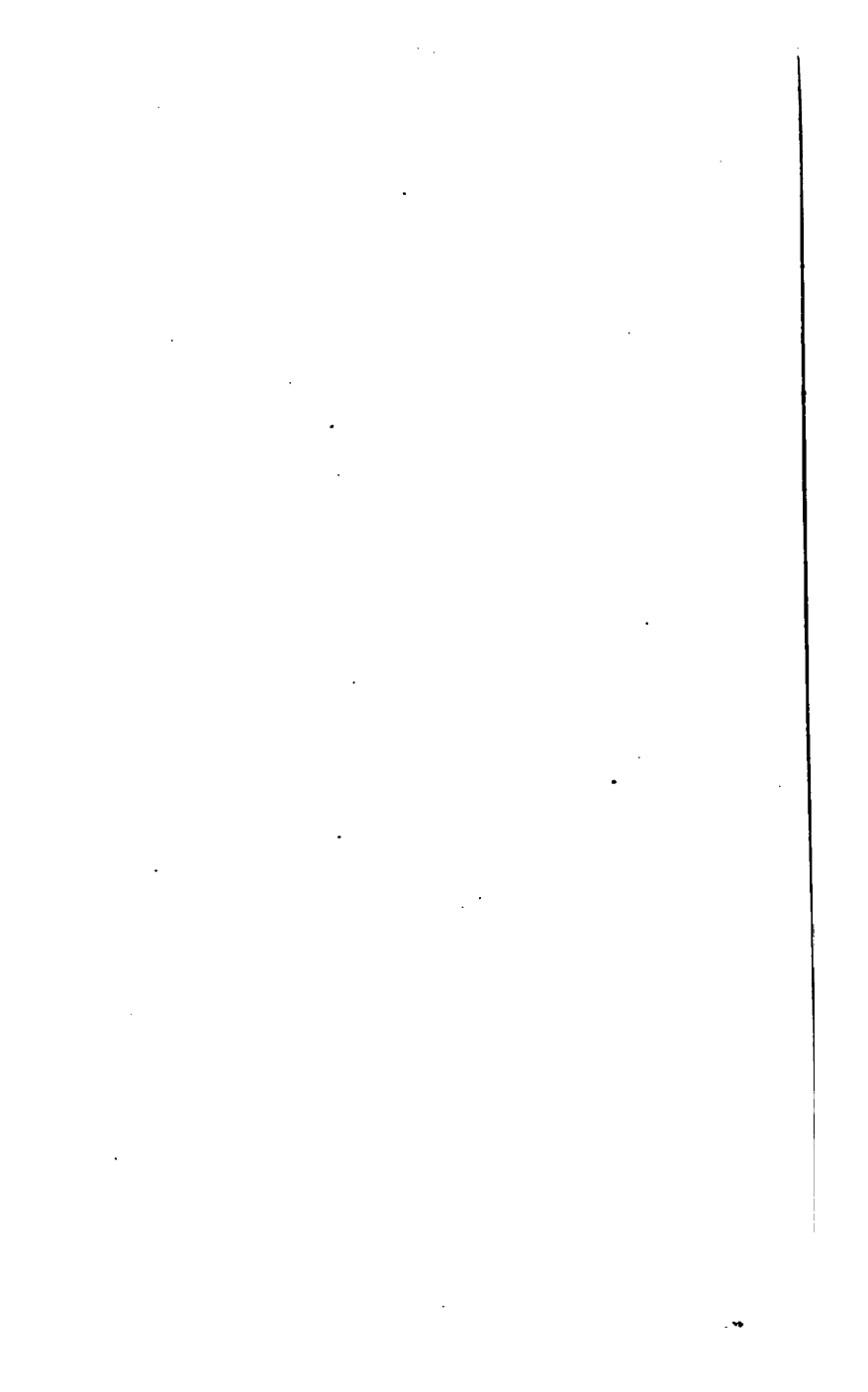
* In the 1st, only two verbs are irregular *aller* and *envoyer*.

† In the 2nd and 4th, the pupil has 80 verbs to learn, conjugated in full in the Alphabetical List of the Irregular Verbs. The compound verbs, of course, are conjugated like their simple verbs; for example, *appartenir* is conjugated like *tenir*; *apprendre* like *prendre*, &c.

‡ In the 3rd Conjugation, the verbs are all irregular, therefore they are given in the Alphabetical List, page 167.

AR VERBS, 3,683.

Conjugation.	3rd Conjugation.	4th Conjugation.	
IR	APERC-EVOIR*	REND-RE	
-issant	Aperc-avant	Rend-ant	
-i	Aperç-u	Rend-u	
e	e	e	
il	nous	vous	ils
elle	nous	vous	elles
e	parl- finiss- apercev- rend- }	ez	ent
it	ous†		
oit			
†			
ait	ions	iez	aient
a	âmes	âtes	èrent
t	*mes	*tes	rent



ALPHABETICAL LIST

OF

ALL THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN THE LANGUAGE.*

The verbs which are not in this list are conjugated according
to the table, page 165.

ABA

ABS

Abattre, to pull down, is conjugated like *battre*.

Aboyer, to bark, is conjugated like *employer*.

ABSOUDRE, to Absolve.† No. 1. Present Infinitive.

Absolvant.

Present Participle.

Absous, m. *absoute*, f.

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. J'absous, tu absous, il absout, nous absolvons,
vous absolvez, ils absolvent. *Imp.* absolv-ais.† *No Perfect.*

Fut. absoudr-ai.† *Cond.* absoudr-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* absolv-e.†

No Imperfect. Imperative. absous, absolvons, absolvez.

Abstenir, to abstain, is conjugated like *tenir*.

Abstraire, to abstract, is conjugated like *traire*.

* *Observe.*—In the following pages the learner will find all the Irregular Verbs in the FRENCH LANGUAGE, arranged alphabetically; therefore, after having looked for a verb—for example, *danser*, to dance—if that verb is not to be found in the list of Irregular Verbs, the pupil may be certain that it is conjugated according to the Table of Regular Verbs, page 165.

† Every verb in *oudre* is conjugated in the same manner.

‡ The other persons are regular according to the table.
See page 165.

ACQ

ALL

Accourir, to run to, is conjugated like *courir*.

Accroire, to make believe, used only in the Present Infinitive with the verb *faire*.

Accroître, to augment, is conjugated like *croître*.

Accueillir, to receive, is conjugated like *cueillir*.

Achever, to finish, is conjugated like *amener*.

Acheter, to buy, is conjugated like *amener*.

ACQUERIR, to Acquire,† No. 2. Present Infinitive.

Acquérant, Present Participle.

Acquis, m. *acquise*, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. J'acquires, tu acquiers, il acquiert, nous acquérons, vous acquérez, ils acquièrent. *Imp.* acquér-ais.* *Perf.* acquis, is, it, îmes, îtes, irent. *Future.* acquerr-ai.* *Cond.* acquerr-ais.* *Present Subj.* acquière, es, e, acquérions, acquérez, acquièrent. *Imp.* acquis-se.* *Imperative.* acquiers, acquérons, acquérez.

Interrogatively. *Pres. Ind.* Est-ce-que j'acquires ? acquiers-tu ? acquiert-il ?

Adjoindre, to adjoin, is conjugated like *joindre*.

Admettre, to admit, is conjugated like *mettre*.

ALLER, to Go. No 3. Present Infinitive.

Allant, Present Participle.

Allé, m. *allée*, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je vais, or je vas, tu vas, il va, nous allons, vous allez, ils vont. *Imp.* all-ais.* *Perf.* all-ai.* *Fut.* ir-ai.* *Cond.* ir-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* aille, ailles, aille, allions, alliez, aillent. *Imp.* allas-se.* *Imperative.* va,† allons, allez.

Interrogatively. *Pres. Ind.*—*Est-ce que je vais ?* Do I go ? *Est-ce que tu vas ? Est-ce qu'il va ? Allons-nous ? Allez-vous ? Est-ce qu'ils vont ?* When the verb is only of one syllable in the present indicative we use the periphrasis, *Est-ce que je vais*, instead of *vais-je ?*

* The other persons are regular according to the table.—
See page 165.

† Every verb in *érir* is conjugated in the same manner.

‡ *Va* takes an *s* when it is followed by the relative pronoun *y* ; as, *vas-y* ; but, if *y* be followed by a verb, it takes no *s* ; as, *va y mettre ordre*.

ALL

APP

Observe.—If you want the imperfect, place *allais* instead of *vais*, and so on for every tense.

<i>S'EN ALLER</i> , to go away.	No. 4. Present Infinitive.
<i>S'en être allé</i> ,	Compound Present.
<i>S'en allant</i> ,	Present Participle.
<i>S'en étant allé</i> ,	Comp. Pres. Part.
<i>Allé, allée, allés, allées</i> ,	Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. *Je m'en vais, tu t'en vas, il s'en va, nous nous en allons, vous vous en allez, il s'en vont, I go away, &c.*

Comp. Pres.—*Je m'en suis allé, tu t'en es allé, il s'en est allé, elle s'en est allée, nous nous en sommes allés, vous vous en êtes allés, ils s'en sont allés, I have gone away, &c.*

Imp.—*Je m'en allais, tu t'en allais, il s'en allait, nous nous en allions, vous vous en alliez, ils s'en allaient, I was going away, &c.*

Comp. Imp.—*Je m'en étais allé, &c.*

Perf.—*Je m'en allai, tu t'en allas, il s'en alla, nous nous en allâmes, vous vous en allâtes, ils s'en allèrent, I went away, &c.*

Comp. Perf.—*Je m'en fus allé, &c.*

Fut.—*Je m'en irai, tu t'en iras, il s'en ira, nous nous en irons, vous vous en irez, ils s'en iront, I shall go away, &c.*

Comp. Fut.—*Je m'en serai allé, &c.*

Cond.—*Je m'en irais, tu t'en irais, il s'en irait, nous nous en irions, vous vous en iriez, ils s'en iroient, I should go away, &c.*

Comp. Cond.—*Je m'en serais allé, &c.*

Pres. Subj.—*Que je m'en aille, que tu t'en ailles, qu'il s'en aille, que nous nous en allions, que vous vous en alliez, qu'ils s'en aillent, That I may go away, &c.*

Comp. Pres.—*Que je m'en sois allé, &c.*

Impérif.—*Que je m'en allasse, que tu t'en allasses, qu'il s'en allât, que nous nous en allassions, que vous vous en allassiez, qu'ils s'en allassent, That I might go away, &c.*

Comp. Imperf.—*Que je m'en fusse allé, &c.*

Imperative.—*Va-t'en, allons-nous-en, allez-vous-en, Go away, &c.*

Apparaître, to appear suddenly, is conjugated like *paraître*.

Apparaître, to be evident, used only in the Present Infinitive with *faire*, and in the Present Indicative, third person singular, *il appert*, it is evident.*

Appartenir, to belong, is conjugated like *tenir*.

* French Academy ; Féraud and Gattel.

APP

APER

APPELER , to call.	No. 5.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Appelant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Appelé</i> ,		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind.—J'appelle,* tu appelles, il appelle, nous appelons, vous appelez, ils appellent. *Imp.* J'appel-ais. *Perf.* J'appel-ai. *Fut.* J'appeller-ai. *Cond.* J'appeller-ais. *Sub. Pres.* que j'appelle, que tu appelles, qu'il appelle, que nous appelions, que vous appeliez, qu'ils appellent. *Imperfect.* que j'appelas-se. *Imperative.* appelle,* appelons, appelez.

AMENER ,† to bring,	No. 6.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Amenant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Amené</i> ,		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind.—J'amène,† tu amènes, il amène, nous amenons, vous amenez, ils amènent. *Imp.* J'amen-ais.† *Perf.* J'amen-ai.† *Fut.* J'amènerai,† tu amèneras, il amènera, nous amènerons, vous amènerez, ils amèneront. *Cond.* J'amènerais, tu amènerais, il amènerait, nous amènerions, vous amèneriez, ils amèneraient. *Pres. Sub.* Que j'amène, que tu amènes, qu'il amène, que nous amenions, que vous ameniez, qu'ils amènent. *Imp.* Que j'amenasse.† *Imperative.* amène, amen-ons, ez. *Appuyer*, to support, is conjugated like *employer*.

APERCEVOIR ,‡ to perceive. No. 7.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Apercevant</i> ,	Present Participle.
<i>Aperçu</i> , m. <i>aperçue</i> , f.	Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. J'aperçois, tu aperçois, il aperçoit, nous apercev-

* The (*i*) is doubled only when it is followed by an *e* mute; this is the only irregularity in the verb. *Jeter* is conjugated in the same manner.

† This verb is regular except when the *n* is followed by an *e* mute, the *e* preceding the *n* must be marked with a grave (') accent. *Acheter*, *achever*, *élever*, *lever*, *mener*, *peser*, *semer*, follow the same particularity.

‡ Every verb ending in *avoir*, is conjugated in the same manner.

ASS

AST

ons, vous apercevez, ils aperçoivent.* *Imp.* apercev-ais.*
Perf. aperçus.* *Future*, apercevr-ai.* *Cond.* apercevr-ais.*
Pres. Subj. aperçoive, es, e, apercev-ions, iez, aperçoivent.
Imperf. aperçus-se.* *Imperative.* aperçois, apercevons, apercevez.

Apprendre, to learn, is conjugated like *prendre*.

ASSAILLIR, to Assault. No. 8. Present Infinitive.
Assaillant, Present Participle.
Assailli, m. *assaillie*, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. J'assaille, tu assailles, il assaille, nous assaillons, vous assaillez, ils assaillent. *Imp.* assaill-ais.* *Perf.* assaill-is.*
Fut. assaillir-ai.* *Cond.* assaillir-ais. *Pres. Subj.* assaill-e.*
Imp. assaillis-se.* *Imperative.* assaill-e, ons, ez.

S'ASSEOIR, to sit down. No. 9. Present Infinitive.
S'asseyant, Present Participle.
Assis, m. *assise*, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je m'assieds, tu t'assieds, il s'assied, nous nous asseyons, vous vous asseyez, ils s'asseient. *Comp. Pres.* je me suis assis. *Imp.* assey-ais, assey-ais, ait, ions, iez, aient.
Comp. Imp. Je m'étais assis. *Perf.* assis, assis, assit, assîmes, assîtes, assirent. *Comp. Perf.* Je me fus assis. *Future.* assier-ai.*
Cond. assier-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* asseie, asseies, asseie, asseyions, asseyiez, asseient. *Imp.* assis-se.* *Imperative.* assieds-toi, asseyons-nous, asseyez-vous.

ASTREINDRE,† to Subject. No. 10. Present Infinitive.
Astreignant, Present Participle.
Astreint, m. *astreinte*, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. J'astreins, tu astreins, il astreint, nous astreignons, vous astreignez, ils astreignent. *Imp.* astreign-ais.*
Perf. astreign-is, is, it, îmes, îtes, irent. *Fut.* astreindr-ai,*

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
 See page 165.

† *Astreindre* is conjugated like *craindre*.

BAT BOI BOU

Cond. astreindr-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* astreign-e.† *Imp.* astreignis-se.† *Imperative.* astreins, astreignons, astreignez.

Atteindre, to overtake, is conjugated like *craindre*.

Avenir, to happen, is conjugated like *venir*, but has only the two third persons.

Avoir, to have. See page 125.

Y AVOIR, there are, or there be. Present infinitive.

Pres. Ind. *Il y a*, there is, or there are. *Imp.* *Il y avait*, there was, or there were. *Perf.* *Il y eut*, there was, or there were. *Fut.* *Il y aura*, there will be. *Cond.* *Il y aurait*, there would be. *Pres. Subj.* *Qu'il y ait*, that there may be. *Imp.* *Qu'il y eût*, that there might be.

The compound tenses are formed by adding *eu* to each simple tense: *Il y a eu*, there has, or have been; *il y avait eu*; *il y eut eu*, &c.

Negatively—*Il n'y a pas*, *Il n'y avait pas*, *il n'y eut pas*, *Il n'y aura pas*, *Il n'y a pas eu*, &c.

Interrogatively.—*Y a-t-il?* *Y avait-il?* *Y eut-il?* *Y aura-t-il?* *Y a-t-il eu?* &c.

Negatively and Interrogatively.—*N'y a-t-il pas?* *N'y avait-il pas?* *N'y eut-il pas?* *N'y aura-t-il pas?* *N'y a-t-il pas eu*, &c.

<i>BATTRE</i> ,* to beat.	No. 11.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Battant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Battu</i> , m. <i>battue</i> , f.		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je bats, tu bats, il bat, nous batt-ons, vous batt-ez, ils batt-ent. *Imp.* batt-ais.† *Perf.* batt-is.† *Fut.* batt-r-ai.† *Cond.* batt-r-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* batt-e.† *Imp.* battis-se.† *Imperative.* bats, battons, battez.

Bégayer, to stammer, is conjugated like *employer*.

Bénir, to bless, is regular, but it has two past participles *béni*, *benie*; and *bénit*, *bénite*, the latter is only used when

* The only irregularity in this verb is, that the three persons singular of the Present Indicative have only one *t*; the rest is regular.

† The other persons are regular according to the table.—See page 165.

BO BR CE

we mean things blessed by the priest; as, *de l'eau bénite par le prêtre*, water blessed by the priest. In any other case use *béni*, *bénie*.

BOIRE , to drink.	No. 12.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Buvant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Bu</i> , m. <i>bue</i> , f.		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je bois, tu bois, il boit, nous buvons, vous buv-ez, ils boivent. *Imp.* Buv-ais.* *Perf.* bus, bus, but, bûmes, bûtes, burent. *Fut.* boir-ai.* *Cond.* boir-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* boiv-e, es, e, buvions, buviez, boivent. *Imp.* bus-se, ses, bût, bus-sions, siez, sent. *Imperative.* bois, buvons, buvez.

BOUILLIR , to boil.	No. 13.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Bouillant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Bouilli</i> , m. <i>boullie</i> , f.		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je bous, tu bous, il bout, nous bouill-ons, vous bouill-ez, ils bouill-ent. *Imp.* bouill-ais.* *Perf.* bouill-is.* *Fut.* bouillir-ai.* *Cond.* bouillir-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* bouill-e,* *Imp.* bouillis-se.* *Imperative.* bous, bouillons, bouillez.

Braire , to bray,	Present Infinitive.
--------------------------	---------------------

This verb is only used in the *Pres. Ind.* *il brait*, *ils braient*; in the *Future*, *il braira*, *ils brairont*; and in the *Cond.* *il brairait*, *ils brairaient*.

Bruire, to rustle, used only in the *Pres. Ind.* *il bruit*, *ils bruient*; † *Pres. Part.* *bruyant*; and in the *Imp.* *il bruysait*, *ils bruysaient*; for the tenses wanted, we use the verb *faire* with the substantive *bruit*; as, *faire du bruit*, *il fait du bruit*, &c.

CEINDRE , ‡ to gird,	No. 14.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Ceignant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Cainte</i> , m. <i>ceinte</i> , f.,		Past Participle.

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

† *Les flots bruient*, The waves roar.

‡ *Ceindre* is conjugated like *craindre*.

CH

CL

COM

Ind. Pres.—Je ceins, tu ceins, il ceint, nous ceign-*ons*, vous ceign-*ez*, ils ceign-*ent*. *Imp.* ceign-*ais*.† *Perf.* ceign-*is*.† *Fut.* ceindr-*ai*.† *Cond.* ceindr-*ais*.† *Pres. Sub.* ceign-*e*.† *Imp.* ceigniss-*e*.† *Imperative.* ceins, ceignons, ceignez.

Choir, to fall, Present Infinitive.

Chu, (used only in these two tenses.) Past Participle.

CIRCONCIRE, to circumcise, No. 15. Present Infinitive.

Circoncisant,|| Present Participle.

Circoncis, Past Participle.

Pres. Ind.—Je circoncis, tu circoncis, il circoncit, nous circoncis-*ons*, vous circoncis-*ez*, ils circoncis-*ent*. *Imp.* circonciss-*ais*.† *Perf.* circonc-*is*, *is*, *it*, *îmes*, *îtes*, *irent*. *Fut.* circoncir-*ai*.† *Cond.* circoncir-*ais*.† *Pres. Sub.* circoncis-*e*.† *Imp.* circoncis-*se*, *ses*, *t*, *sions*, *siez*, *sent*. *Imperative.* circoncis, circoncisons, circoncisez. Compound tenses are conjugated with *avoir*.

Circonscrire, to circumscribe, is conjugated like *écrire*.

Circonvenir, to agree, is conjugated like *venir*.

CLORE or *clorre*, to close, No. 16. Present Infinitive.

No Present Participle.

Clos, *m. close*, *f.* Past Participle.

Pres. Ind.—Je clos, tu clos, il clôt, no plural. No imperfect. No perfect. *Fut.* clôt-*ai* or clorr-*ai*.† *Cond.* clôt-*ais* or clorr-*ais*.† *Pres. Sub.* clos-*e*, *es*, *e*, *ions*, *iez*, *ent*. *Imperative.* clos, closons, closez.

Combattre, to fight, is conjugated like *battre*.

COMMENCER,§ to begin, No. 17. Present Infinitive.

Commencant, Present Participle.

Commencé, Past Participle.

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—See page 165.

|| Bescherelle's Grammar gives the present participle and imperfect.

§ The irregularity in this verb is only the *cedilla* placed under the *c* before *a*, *o*, *u*. Every verb ending in *cer* is conjugated in the same manner.

COM

CON

Pres. Ind.—Je commenc-e, tu commenc-es, il commenc-e, nous commenç-ons, vous commenc-ez, ils commenc-ent. *Imp.* Je commenç-ais.† *Fut.* Je commencer-ai.† *Cond.* Je commencer-ais. *Pres. Sub.* que Je commenc-e.† *Imp.* que Je commenças-se. *Imperative.* commence, commençons, commencez.

Commettre, to commit, is conjugated like *mettre*.

Comparaître, to appear before a judge, is conjugated like *paraître*.

Comparaître, to make one's appearance, used only in the present infinitive.

Complaire, to please, is conjugated like *plaire*.

Comprendre, to comprehend, to understand, is conjugated like *prendre*.

Compromettre, to compromise, is conjugated like *mettre*.

CONCEVOIR, § to conceive. No. 18. Present Infinitive.

Concevant, Present Participle.

Conçu, Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je conço-ïs, tu conço-ïs, il conço-ît, nous concev-ons, vous concev-ez, ils conço-oient.† *Imp.* conce-vais.† *Perf.* conço-us.† *Fut.* concevr-ai.† *Cond.* concevr-ais.† *Pres. Sub.* conçoiv-e, es, e, concevions, conceviez, conçoivent.† *Imp.* conçus-se, ses, ^t, sions, siez, sent. *Imperative.* conçois, concevons, concevez.

CONCLURE, to conclude, No. 19. Present Infinitive.

Concluant, Present Participle.

Conclu, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je conclus, tu conclus, il conclut, nous conclu-ons, vous conclu-ez, ils conclu-ent. *Imp.* conclu-ais.† *Perf.* concl-us, us, ut, ûmes, ûtes, urent. *Fut.* conclur-ai.† *Cond.* conclur-ais.† *Pres. Sub.* conclu-e.† *Imp.* conclus-se.† *Imperative.* conclus, concluons, concluez.

Concourir, to concur, is conjugated like *courir*.

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

§ *Concevoir* is conjugated like *apercevoir*.

CON

CONDUIRE ,† to conduct, No. 20.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Conduisant</i> ,	Present Participle.
<i>Conduit</i> , m. e, f.	Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je conduis, tu conduis, il conduit, nous conduisons, vous conduisez, ils conduisent. *Imp.* conduis-ais.* *Perf.* conduis-is, is, it, îmes, îtes, irent. *Fut.* conduire-ai.* *Cond.* conduir-ais.* *Pres. Sub.* conduis-e.* *Imp.* conduisis-se. *Imperative.* conduis, conduisons, conduisez.

CONFIRE , to preserve, No. 21.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Confisant</i> ,	Present Participle.
<i>Confit</i> , m. e, f.	Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je confis, tu confis, il confit, nous confisons, vous confisez, ils confisent. *Imp.* confis-ais.* *Per.* conf-is, is, it, îmes, îtes, irent. *Fut.* confir-ai.* *Cond.* confir-ais.* *Sub. Pres.* confis-e.* *Imp.* confis-se.* *Imperative.* confis, confisons, confisez.

Conjoindre, to join together, is conjugated like *joindre*.

CONNAITRE †, to know, No. 22.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Connaissant</i> ,	Present Participle.
<i>Connu</i> , m. e, f.	Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je connais, tu connais, il connaît, nous connaissons, vous connaissez, ils connaissent. *Imp.* connaiss-ais.* *Perf.* conn-us, us, ut, ûmes, ûtes, urent. *Fut.* connaîtr-ai.* *Cond.* connaîtr-ais.* *Pres. Sub.* connaiss-e.* *Imp.* connusse,* *Imperative* connais, connaissons, connaissez.

CONQUERIR ,§ to conquer, No. 23.	Present Infinitive.
---	---------------------

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.— See page 165.

† Every verb ending in *uire* is conjugated in the same manner.

‡ Every verb ending in *ître* is conjugated in the same manner. *Connaitre*, to know, means to be acquainted by sight; *savoir*, to know, means mental knowledge.

§ *Conquérir* is conjugated like *acquérir*.

CON

Conquérant, Present Participle.
Conquis, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. no singular, nous conquérons, vous conquérez, ils conquièrent. *Imp.* conquér-ais.* *Perf.* conqu-is, is, it, imes, ites, irent. *Fut.* conquerr-ai.* *Cond.* conquerr-ais.* *Pres. Sub.* conquièr-e.* *Imperfect.* conquis-se.* *Imperative.* conquiers, conquérons, conquérez.

Consentir, to consent, is conjugated like *sentir*.

CONSTRUIRE,† to construct, No. 24. Present Infinitive.
Construisant, Present Participle.
Construit, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je construis, tu construis, il construit, nous construis-ons, vous construisez, ils construisent. *Imp.* construis-ais.* *Perf.* construis-is.* *Fut.* construire-ai.* *Cond.* construire-ais.* *Pres. Sub.* construis-e.* *Imp.* construisais-se.* *Imperative.* construis, construisons, construisez.

Contenir, to contain, is conjugated like *tenir*.

CONTRAINDRE,‡ to contain, No. 25. Present Infinitive.
Contraignant, Present Participle.
Contraint, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je contrains, tu contrains, il contraint, nous contrainsons, vous contrainsez, ils contraignent. *Imp.* contrain-ais.* *Perf.* contrain-is.* *Fut.* contraindr-ai.* *Cond.* contraindr-ais.* *Pres. Sub.* contrain-e.* *Imp.* contraignais-se.* *Imperative.* contrains, contrainsons, contraignez.

Contredire, to contradict, is conjugated like *dire*, except the second person plural of the Present Indicative, which makes *contredisez*.

Contrefaire, to counterfeit, is conjugated like *faire*.

Contrevenir, to act contrary to, is conjugated like *venir*.

Convaincre, to convince, is conjugated like *vaincre*.

Convenir, to agree, is conjugated like *venir*.

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
 See page 165.

† *Construire*, is conjugated like *conduire*.

‡ *Contraindre*, is conjugated like *craindre*.

COU

CRA

Corrompre, to corrupt, is conjugated like *rompre*.

Côtoyer, to coast along, is conjugated like *employer*.

COUDRE, to sew. No. 26. Present Infinitive.

Cousant, Present Participle.

Cousu, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je couds, tu couds, il coud, nous cousons, vous cousez, ils cousent. *Imp.* cous-ais.* *Perf.* cous-us, us, us, ûmes, ûtes, urent; or, cous-is, is, it, îmes, îtes, irent. *Fut.* coudr-ai.* *Cond.* coudr-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* cous-e.* *Imperf.* cousus-se, or, cousis-se.* *Imperative*, coudez, cousons, cousez.

COURIR, to run. No. 27. Present Infinitive.

Courant, Present Participle.

Couru, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je cours, tu cours, il court, nous courons, vous courez, ils courent. *Imp.* cour-ais.* *Perf.* cour-us, us, ut. ûmes, ûtes, rent. *Fut.* courr-ai.* *Cond.* courr-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* cour-e.* *Imp.* courus-se.* *Imperative*. cours, courons, courez. *Courir* takes *avoir* in its compound tenses.

COUVRIR, to cover. No. 28. Present Infinitive.

Couvrant, Present Participle.

Couvert, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je couvre, tu couvres, il couvre, nous couvrons, vous couvrez, ils couvrent. *Imp.* couvr-ais.* *Perf.* couvr-is.* *Fut.* couvrir-ai.* *Cond.* couvrir-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* couvr-e.* *Imp.* couvris-se.* *Imperative*. couvre, couvrons, couvrez.

CRAINdre,† to fear. No. 29. Present Infinitive.

Craignant, Present Participle.

Craint, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je crains, tu crains, il craint, nous craign-ons, vous craign-ez, ils craign-ent. *Imp.* craign-ais* *Perfect*,

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

† Every verb in *indre* is conjugated in the same manner.

CRO CUE CUI

craign-is.* *Fut.* craindr-ai.* *Cond.* craindr-ais. *Pres. Subj.*
craign-e.* *Imp.* craignis-se.* *Imperative.* crains, craignons,
craignez.

CROIRE, to believe. No. 30. Present Infinitive.
Croyant, Present Participle.
Cru, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je crois, tu crois, il croit, nous croyons, vous
croyez, ils croient. *Imp.* croy-ais. *Perf.* cru-s, s, t, ûmes,
ûtes, rent. *Fut.* croir-ai.* *Cond.* croir-ais.* *Pres. Subj.*
croie; croies, croie, croyions, croyiez, croient. *Imp.* crus-se.*
Imperative. crois, croyons, croyez.

CROITRE, to grow. No. 31. Present Infinitive.
Croissant, Present Participle.
Crû, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je crois, tu crois, il croît, nous croiss-ons, vous
croiss-ez, ils croiss-ent. *Imp.* croiss-ais.* *Perf.* cru-s, s, t,
ûmes, ûtes, rent. *Fut.* croîtr-ai.* *Cond.* croîtr-ais.* *Pres.*
Subj. crois-se, ses, se, sions, siez, sent.* *Imp.* crus-se.*
Imperative. crois, croissons, croissez.

CUEILLIR, to gather. No. 32. Present Infinitive.
Cueillant, Present Participle.
Cueilli, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je cueille, tu cueilles, il cueille, nous cueill-
ons, vous cueill-ez, ils cueill-ent. *Imp.* cueill-ais. *Perf.*
cueill-is.* *Fut.* cueiller-ai.* *Cond.* cueiller-ais.* *Pres.*
Subj. cueill-e.* *Imp.* cueillis-se. *Imperative.* cueille,
cueillons, cueillez.

CUIRE, to bake. No. 33. Present Infinitive.
Cuisant, Present Participle.
Cuit, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je cuis, tu cuis, il cuit, nous cuis-ons, vous

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

DEC

DED

cuis-ez; ils cuis-ent. *Imp.* cuis-ais. *Perf.* cuis-is.* *Fut.* cuir-ai.* *Cond.* cuir-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* cuis-e.* *Imp.* cuisisse.* *Imperative.* cuis, cuisons, cuisez.

Débattre, to debate, is conjugated like *battre*.

DECEVOIR,† to deceive. No. 34. Present Infinitive.

Décevant, Present Participle.

Déçu, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je déçois, tu déçois, il déçoit, nous décevons, vous décevez, ils déçoivent. *Imp.* décev-ais.* *Perf.* déçu-s.* *Fut.* décevr-ai.* *Cond.* décevr-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* déçoive, déçoives, déçoive, décevions, déceviez, déçoivent. *Imp.* décus-se.* *Imperative.* déçois, décevons, decevez.

DECHOIR, to decay. No. 35. Present Infinitive.

Déchéant, Present Participle.

Déchu, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je déchois, tu déchois, il déchoit, nous déchoyons, vous déchoyez, ils déchoient. *Imp.* déchoy-ais, or déché-ais.* *Perf.* déchu-s.* *Fut.* décherr-ai.* *Cond.* décherr-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* déchoi-e, es, e, déchoyions, déchoyiez, déchoint. *Imp.* déchus-se.* *Imperative.* déchois, déchoyons, déchoyez.

Déclorre, to uncloze, is conjugated like *clorre*.

Déconfire, to discomfit, is conjugated like *confire*.

Déconstruire, to alter the construction, is conjugated like *conduire*.

Découdre, to ensue, is conjugated like *coudre*.

Découvrir, to discover, is conjugated like *couvrir*.

Décrire, to describe, is conjugated like *écrire*.

Décroître, to decrease, is conjugated like *croître*.

Décuire, to make sirups thinner, is conjugated like *cuire*.

Se Dédire, to retract, is conjugated like *dire*, except the second person plural of the present indicative, which makes *vous dédisez*.

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

† *Décevoir* is conjugated like *apercevoir*.

DED

DEF

DEJ

DEP

DEDUIRE , to deduct.* No. 36.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Déduisant</i> ,	Present Participle.
<i>Déduit</i> , m. e, f.	Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je déduis, tu déduis, il déduit, nous déduis-*ons*, vous déduis-*ez*, ils déduis-*ent*. *Imperf.* déduis-*ais*.† *Perf.* déduis-*is*.† *Fut.* déduir-*ai*.† *Cond.* déduir-*ais*.† *Pres. Sub.* déduis-*e*.† *Imp.* déduis-*is-se*.† *Imperative.* déduis, déduisons, déduisez.

DEFAILLIR , to get weak. No. 37.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Défailli</i> ,	Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. No singular. Nous défail*lons*, vous défail*lez*. ils défail*lent*. *Imp.* défail*l-ais*. *Perf.* défail*l-is*; † only used in those tenses.

Défaire, to undo, is conjugated like *faire*.

Déjoindre, to disjoin, is conjugated like *joindre*.

Démètre, to deny the truth, is conjugated like *mentir*.

Démètre, to put out of joint, is conjugated like *mettre*.

Démouvoir, to make one desist, (a law term,) used only in the Infinitive Present,

Départir, to distribute, is conjugated like *partir*.

Dépeindre, to depict, to describe, is conjugated like *craindre*.

Déplaire, to displease, is conjugated like *plaire*.

Déployer, to displease, is conjugated like *employer*.

Dépourvoir, to deprive; past participle, *dépourvu*, used only in these two tenses.

Déprendre, to free, to disengage, is conjugated like *prendre*.

Déprévenir, to free a person from his prejudices; *se déprévenir*, to dispose one's prejudices; is conjugated like *venir*.

Désapprendre, to forget, is conjugated like *prendre*.

Desservir, to perform the duties of living; to do an ill office to a person; to clear the table after a meal; is conjugated like *servir*.

Déteindre, to discolour, is conjugated like *craindre*.

Détenir, to detain, is conjugated like *tentr*.

* Every verb in *uire*, is conjugated like *conduire*.

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

	DE	DEV	DIRE
DETRUIRE ,* to destroy, No. 38.			Present Infinitive.
<i>Détruisant</i> ,			Present Participle.
<i>Détruit</i> , m. e, f.			Past Participle.
<i>Pres. Ind.</i> Je détruis, tu détruis, il détruit, nous détruis- ons, vous détruisez, ils détruis-ent. <i>Imp.</i> détruisez.† <i>Perf.</i> détruis-is.† <i>Fut.</i> détruir-ai.† <i>Cond.</i> détruira-is.† <i>Pres. Subj.</i> détruis-e.† <i>Imp.</i> détruisez-se.† <i>Imperative.</i> détruisez, détruisez- ons, détruisez.			
<i>Devenir</i> , to become, is conjugated like <i>venir</i> .			
<i>Dévêtir</i> , to undress, is conjugated like <i>vêtir</i> .			
DEVOIR ,‡ to owe. No. 39.			Present Infinitive.
<i>Devant</i> ,			Present Participle.
<i>Dû</i> , m. due, f.			Past Participle.
<i>Pres. Ind.</i> Je dois, tu dois, il doit, nous devons, vous devez, ils doivent. <i>Imp.</i> dev-ais.† <i>Perf.</i> du-s. <i>Fut.</i> devr-ai.† <i>Cond.</i> devr-ais.† <i>Pres. Subj.</i> doiv-e, es, e, devons, deviez, doivent. <i>Imp.</i> dus-se.† <i>Imperative.</i> dois, devons, devez.			
DIRE , to say. No. 40.			Present Infinitive.
<i>Disant</i> ,			Present Participle.
<i>Dit</i> , m. e, f.			Past Participle.
<i>Pres. Ind.</i> Je dis, tu dis, il dit, nous disons, vous dites, ils disent. <i>Imp.</i> dis-ais.† <i>Perf.</i> d-is. <i>Fut.</i> dir-ai.† <i>Cond.</i> dir-ais.† <i>Pres. Subj.</i> dis-e.† <i>Imp.</i> dis-se.† <i>Imperative.</i> dis, disons, dites.			
<i>Discouvenir</i> , to deny, is conjugated like <i>venir</i> .			
<i>Discourir</i> , to discourse, is conjugated like <i>courir</i> .			
<i>Disjoindre</i> , to disjoin, to separate, is conjugated like <i>craindre</i> .			
<i>Disparaître</i> , to disappear, is conjugated like <i>paraître</i> .			
DISSOUDRE ,§ to dissolve. No. 41.			Present Infinitive.
<i>Dissolvant</i> ,			Present Participle.
<i>Dissous</i> , m. dissoute, f.			Past Participle.

* *Détruire*, is conjugated like *conduire*.

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

‡ *Devoir* is conjugated like *apercevoir*.

§ *Dissoudre*, is conjugated like *absoudre*.

DOR EB ECR

Pres. Ind. Je dissous, tu dissous, il dissout, nous dissolvons, vous dissolv-ez, ils dissolv-ent. *Imp.* dissolv-ais.* *No Perfect.* *Fut.* dissoudr-ai.* *Cond.* dissoudr-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* dissolv-e.* *No Imperfect.* *Imperative.* dissous, dissolvons, dissolvez.

Distraire, to take from, to divert, is conjugated like *traire*.

DORMIR, to Sleep. No. 42. Present Infinitive.

Dormant, Present Participle.

Dormi, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je dors, tu dors, il dort, nous dorm-ons, vous dorm-ez, ils dorm-ent. *Imp.* dorm-ais.* *Perf.* dormi-s.* *Fut.* dormir-ai.* *Cond.* dormir-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* dorm-e.* *Imp.* dormis-se.* *Imperative.* dors, dormons, dormez.

S'Ebattre, to take one's pleasure, is conjugated like *battre*.

Ebouillir, to over boil; Past Participle, *ébouilli*, used only in these two tenses.

ECHOIR, to Expire. No. 43. Present Infinitive.

Echéant, Present Participle.

Echu, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Il échoit, or, il échet, ils échoient, or, ils échéent, used only in those two persons. *No Imperfect.* *Perf.* échu-s.* *Fut.* écherr-ai.* *Cond.* écherr-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* il échée, ils échéent. *Imp.* échus-se.* *No Imperative.*

Eclorre, to hatch, is conjugated like *clorre*, but only in the third persons singular and plural.

Econduire, to refuse, is conjugated like *conduire*.

ECRIRE, to write. No. 44. Present Infinitive.

Ecrivant, Present Participle.

Ecrit, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. J'écris, tu écris, il écrit, nous écriv-ons, écriv-ez, écriv-ent. *Imp.* écriv-ais.* *Perf.* écriv-is.* *Fut.* écrire-ai.* *Cond.* écrire-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* écriv-e.* *Imperf.* écrivis-se.* *Imperative.* écris, écrivons, écrivez.

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

EL EM EN

Elire, to elect, is conjugated like *lire*.

Elever, to rise, has the same irregularity as *amener*.

Embattre, to lay the tier of a wheel, is conjugated like *battre*.

S'Emboire, to imbibe, is conjugated like *boire*, but has only the two third persons.

Emettre, to put into circulation, is conjugated like *mettre*.

Emoudre, to sharpen, is conjugated like *moudre*.

Emouvoir, to agitate, is conjugated like *mouvoir*.

EMPLOYER,* to employ. No. 45. Present Infinitive.

Employant, Present Participle.

Employé, Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. J'emploie, tu emploies, il emploie, nous employons, vous employez, ils emploient. *Imp.* j'employais, tu employais, il employait, nous employions, vous employiez, ils employaient. *Perf.* j'employai.† *Fut.* j'emploierai.† *Cond.* j'emploierais.† *Pres. Subj.* Que j'emploie, que tu emploies, qu'il emploie, que nous employions, que vous employiez, qu'ils emploient. *Imp.* que j'employasse.† *Imperative.* emploie, employons, employez.

Empreindre, to imprint, is conjugated like *craindre*.

Enceindre, to surround, is conjugated like *craindre*.

Enclorre, to fence, is conjugated like *clorre*.

Encourir, to incur, is conjugated like *courir*.

Endormir, to make one sleep, is conjugated like *dormir*.

Enduire, to do over, is conjugated like *conduire*.

Enfreindre, to trespass, is conjugated like *craindre*.

S'Enfuir, to run away, is conjugated like *fuir*.

Enjoindre, to prescribe, is conjugated like *craindre*.

S'Enquérir, to inquire, is conjugated like *acquérir*.

s'Ensuiivre, to ensue, is conjugated like *suiivre*, but only used in the two third persons.

Entreluire, to shine half, is conjugated like *luire*. *La lune entre-luisait à travers les feuilles.*

s'Entre-mettre, to interpose, is conjugated like *mettre*.

Entreprendre, to undertake, is conjugated like *prendre*.

Entretenir, to entertain, is conjugated like *tenir*.

Entrevoir, to see imperfectly, is conjugated like *voir*.

* All verbs in *yer* are conjugated like *employer*.

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

EN FA

ENTR'OUIR, to hear imperfectly, No. 46. Present Infinitive.*Ent'rouï,*

Present Participle.

Perf. entr'ouï-s. *Imp. Sub.* entr'ouïs-se:* used only in these tenses.**ENVOYER**, to send, No. 47.

Present Infinitive.

Envoyant,

Present Participle.

Envoyé, m. e f.

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. J'envoie, tu envoies, il envoie, nous envoyons, envoyez, envoient. *Imp.* envoyais.* *Perf.* envoyai.* *Fut.* enverrai.* *Cond.* enverrais.* *Pres. Sub.* envoie, envoies, envoie, envoyions, envoyiez, envoient. *Imp.* envoyas-se.* *Imperative.* envoie, envoyons, envoyez.

Epreindre, to squeeze out, to strain, is conjugated like *craindre*.
s' Eprendre, only used in the past participle, *épris*, captivated.

Equivaloir, to be of equal valour, is conjugated like *valoir*.

Eteindre, to extinguish, is conjugated like *craindre*.

Etre, to be. See page 130.

Etreindre, to press close, is conjugated like *craindre*.

Exclure, to exclude, is conjugated like *conclure*.

Extraire, to extract, is conjugated like *traire*.

FAILLIR, to fail, No. 48.

Present Infinitive.

Faillant,

Present Participle.

Failli,

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je faux, tu faux, il faut, nous faillons, vous failliez, ils faillent, J'ai failli. *Imp.* faillais.* *Perf.* faillis.* *Fut.* faillirai.* *Cond.* faillirais.* *Pres. Sub.* faill-e.* *Imp.* faillis-se.* *No imperative.*

This verb is seldom in use, but in the infinitive Present, Past Participle, and Perfect.

FAIRE,† to do, make, No. 49.

Present Infinitive.

Faisant,

Present Participle.

Fait, m. e f.

Past Participle.

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
 See page 165.

† The spelling of this verb is according to the FRENCH ACADEMY and BECHERELLE.

FA FEI FER FOR

Pres. Ind. Je fais, tu fais, il fait, nous faisons, vous faites, ils font. *Imp.* fais-ais.† *Perf.* f-is.† *Fut.* fer-ai.†
Cond. fer-ais.† *Pres. Sub.* fas-se, ses, se, sions, siez, sent.
Imp. fis-se.† *Imperative.* fais, faisons, faites.

FALLOIR, † to be necessary, No. 50. Present Infinitive.
 No Present Participle.

Fallu, Past Participle.
Impersonal Verb. *Pres. Ind.* il faut. *Imp.* il fallait.
Perf. il fallut. *Fut.* il faudra. *Cond.* il faudrait. *Pres. Sub.*
 qu'il faille. *Imp.* qu'il fallût. *No imperative.*

FEINDRE, § to feign, to pretend, No. 51. Present Infinitive.
Feignant, Present Participle.
Feint, m. e f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je fein-s, tu fein-s, il fein-t, nous feign-ons, vous feign-ez, ils feign-ent. *Imp.* feign-ais.† *Perf.* feign-is.†
Fut. feindrai.† *Cond.* feindra.† *Pres. Sub.* feign-e†
Imp. feignis-se.† *Imperative.* feins, feignons, feignez.

FÉRIR, to strike, used only in the Infinitive Present, *sans coup* *férir*, without striking a blow.

FLEURIR, to flourish, is regular, but employed figuratively, makes in the Present Participle, *florissant*, flourishing; and Imperfect, *florissait*, was flourishing; as, *l'éloquence florissait à Rome*, eloquence was flourishing at Rome.

FORCLORRE, to bar, past participle, *forclos*, used only in these two tenses.

FORFAIRE, to fail, to trespass, past participle *forfait*, used only in these two tenses.

FRIRE, to fry, No. 52. Present Infinitive.
 No Present Participle.
Frit, m. e f. Past Participle.

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
 See page 165.

† The verb governed by *falloir* , must be in the Infinitive Present, or in the Subjunctive mood; as, *il faut partir, il faudra que j'aille, il fallait que j'allasse.*

§ *Feindre* is conjugated like *craindre*.

FUI GES HAI IND

Pres. Ind. Je fris, tu fris, il frit. *No plural.* *Fut.* frir-ai.†
Cond. frir-ais;† only used in those tenses.

The tenses which are wanting are formed with *faire*, and the infinitive present; as, *Je faisais frire*.

FUIR, to flee, to run away, No. 53. Present Infinitive.
Fuyant, Present Participle.
Fui, Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je fuis, tu fuis, il fuit, nous fuyons, vous fuyez, ils fuient. *Imp.* fuyais.† *Perf.* fu-is,† or Je pris la fuite. *Fut.* fuir-ai.† *Cond.* fuir-ais,† *Pres. Sub.* fui-e, es, e, fuyions, fuyiez, fuient. *Imp.* fuis-se;† or prisse la fuite. *Imperative.* fuis, fuyons, fuyez.

s'Enfuir, to fly away, is conjugated like *fuir*.

Gésir,† to lie, present participle, *gisant*; present indicative, *il gît, ils gisent*; imperfect, *il gisait, ils gisaient*; used only in these tenses and persons.

HAIR, to hate, (pronounced *a-ir*,) No. 54. Present Infinitive.
Haïssant, Present Participle.
Haï, Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je hais,§ tu hais, il hait, nous haïssons, vous haïssez, ils haïssent. *Imp.* haïss-ais.† *Perf.* haïs.† *Fut.* haïr-ai.† *Cond.* haïr-ais.† *Pres. Sub.* haïss-e.† *Imperfect.* haïs-se.† *Imperative.* hais, haïssons, haïssez.

INDUIRE,|| to induce, No. 55. Present Infinitive.
Induisant, Present Participle.
Induit, m. e f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. J'induis, tu induis, il induit, nous induis-ons, vous induis-ez, ils induis-ent. *Imp.* induis-ais.† *Perf.* induis-is.† *Fut.* induir-ai.† *Cond.* induir-ais.† *Pres Sub.*

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

† French Academy, Wailly, Féraud, Gattel.

§ The only irregularity in this verb is that the *i* in the present indicative, singular, does not take a dieresis. *Je hais, tu hais, il hait*, pronounced, *Je è, tu è, il è*.

|| *Induire* is conjugated like *conduire*.

INS INT JOIN

induis-e.† *Imp.* induisis-se.† *Imperative*, induis, induisons, induisez.

INSCRIRE,† to inscribe, No. 56. Present Infinitive.
Inscrivant, Present Participle.
Inscrit, m. e f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. J'inscris, tu inscris, il inscrit, nous inscriv-ons, vous inscrivez, ils inscrivent. *Imp.* inscrivez.† *Perfect*, inscrivez.† *Fut.* inscrivez.† *Cond.* inscrivez.† *Pres. Sub.* inscrivez.† *Imp.* inscrivez.† *Imperative*, inscrivez, inscrivez-ous, inscrivez.

INSTRUIRE,§ to instruct, No. 57. Present Infinitive.
Instruisant, Present Participle.
Instruit, m. e f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. J'instruis, tu instruis, il instruit, nous instruis-ous, vous instruisiez, ils instruisent. *Imp.* instruisiez.† *Perf.* instruisiez.† *Fut.* instruisiez.† *Cond.* instruisiez.† *Pres. Sub.* instruisiez.† *Imp.* instruisiez.† *Imperative*, instruisiez, instruisiez-ous, instruisiez.

Interdire, to interdict, is conjugated like *dire* ; but the second person plural, present indicative, makes *interdisez*.

Interrompre, to interrupt, is conjugated like *rompre*.

Intervenir, to interpose, is conjugated like *venir*.

Introduire, to introduce, is conjugated like *conduire*.

Issir, to be descended, past participle, *issu* ; used only in these two tenses.

Jeter, to throw, is conjugated like *appeler*.

JOINDRE,|| to join. No. 58. Present Infinitive.
Joignant, Present Participle.
Joint, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je joins, tu joins, il joint, nous joignons, vous joignez, ils joignent. *Imp.* joignez.† *Perf.* joignez.† *Fut.*

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
 See page 165.

† *Inscrire* is conjugated like *écrire*.

§ *Instruire* is conjugated like *conduire*.

|| *Joindre* is conjugated like *craindre*.

LEV LIR LUI MA

joindr-ai.* *Cond.* joindr-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* joign-e.* *Imp.*
joignis-se.* *Imperative*, joins, joignons, joignez.

Lever, to rise, is conjugated like *amener*.

<i>LIRE</i> , to read.	No. 59.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Lisant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Lu</i> , m. e, f.		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je lis, tu lis, il lit, nous lisons, vous lisez, ils lisent. *Imp.* lis-ais.* *Perf.* lus, lus, lut, lûmes, lûtes, lurent.
Fut. lir-ai.* *Cond.* lir-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* lis-e.* *Imp.* lus-se.* *Imperative*, lis, lisons, lisez.

<i>LUIRE</i> ,† to shine.‡	No. 60.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Luisant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Lui</i> ,		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je luis, tu luis, il luit, nous luis-ons, vous luis-ez, ils luis-ent. *Imp.* luis-ais.* *No perfect.* *Fut.* luir-ai.* *Cond.* luir-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* luis-e.* *No imperfect.*
Imperative, luis, luisons, luissez.

This verb takes the auxiliary *avoir*.

Maintenir, to maintain, is conjugated like *tenir*.

Malfaire, to do mischief; Past Participle, *malfait*, used only in these two tenses.

<i>MANGER</i> ,§ to eat,	No. 61.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Mangeant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Mangé</i> , m. e f.		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je mange, tu manges, il mange, nous mangeons, vous mangez, ils mangent. *Imp.* je mangeais, tu mangeais, il mangeait, nous mangions, vous mangiez, ils mangeaient.
Perf. je mangeai, tu mangeas, il mangea, nous mangeâmes,

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

† *Luire* is conjugated like *conduire*.

‡ This verb is conjugated according to the FRENCH ACADEMY, Restaut, Wailly. By other grammarians it is conjugated differently. § See No. 461.

MAU

MÉ

MEN

vous mangeâtes, ils mangèrent. *Fut.* je mangerai, tu mangeras, il mangera, nous mangerons, vous mangerez, ils mangeront, *Cond.* je mangerais, tu mangerais, il mangerait, nous mangerions, vous mangeriez, ils mangeraient. *Pres. Sub.* que je mange, que tu manges, qu'il mange, que nous mangions, que vous mangiez, qu'ils mangent. *Imp.* que je mangeasse, que tu mangeasses, qu'il mangeât, que nous mangeassions, que vous mangeassiez, qu'ils mangeassent. *Imperative.* mange, mangeons, mangez. *Interrogatively.* Est-ce que je mange? manges tu? manget-il? &c.

MAUDIRE, to curse.

No. 62.

Present Infinitive.

Maudissant,

Present Participle.

Maudit, m. e, f.

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je maudis, tu maudis, il maudit, nous maudissons, vous maudissez, ils maudissent. *Imp.* maudiss-ais.† *Perf.* maud-is.† *Fut.* maudir-ai.† *Cond.* maudir-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* maudiss-e.† *Imp.* maudiss-se.† *Imperative*, maudis, maudissons, maudissez.

Méconnaître, to forget, not to know, is conjugated like *connaître*.

Mécroire, to disbelieve, used only in the infinitive present.

Médire, to speak evil, to slander, is conjugated like *dire*, but the second person Plural, present indicative, makes *médisez*.

Méfaire, to misdo, to do wrong; participle past, *méfait*, used only in those two tenses.

Mener is conjugated like *amener*.

MENTIR,† to lie,

No. 63.

Present Infinitive.

Mentant,

Present Participle.

Menti,

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je mens, tu mens, il ment, nous ment-ons, vous ment-ez, ils ment-ent. *Imp.* ment-ais.† *Perf.* menti-s.†

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

‡ Every verb in *entir*, is conjugated in the same manner.

MES

MET

MOU

Fut. mentir-ai.* *Cond.* mentir-ais. *Pres. Subj.* ment-e.*
Imp. mentis-se.* *Imperative,* mens, mentons, mentez.

INTERROGATIVELY.—*Pres. Ind.* Est-ce que je mens ?
 mens-tu ? ment-il ? &c.†

se Méprendre, to mistake, is conjugated like *prendre*.

Mésarriver, to mischance, impersonal verb, has only the third person singular, and is conjugated like *parler*, page 136.

Messéoir, to be unbecoming, is conjugated like *séoir*.

MESA VENIR, to mischance. No. 64. Present Infinitive.

Mésavenant,

Present Participle.

Mésavenu,

Past Participle.

IMPERSONAL VERB.—*Pres. Ind.* il mésavient. *Imp.* il mésavenait. *Perf.* il mésavint. *Fut.* il mésavien-dra. *Cond.* il mésaviendrait. *Pres. Subj.* qu'il mésavienne. *Imp.* qu'il mésavint. *Imperative.* qu'il mésavienne.

Mésoffrir, to underbid, is conjugated like *offrir*.

METTRE, to put.

No. 65.

Present Infinitive.

Mettant,

Present Participle.

Mis, m. e, f.

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je mets, tu mets, il met, nous mett-ons, vous mett-ez, ils mett-ent. *Imp.* mett-ais.* *Perf.* mis, mis, mit, mîmes, mîtes, mirent. *Fut.* mettr-ai.* *Cond.* mettr-ais.*
Pres. Subj. mett-e.* *Imp.* mis-se.* *Imperative,* mets, mett-ons, mettez.

INTERROGATIVELY.—*Pres. Ind.*† Est-ce que je mets ?
 mets-tu ? met-il ? &c.

MOUDRE, to grind,

No. 66.

Present Infinitive.

Moulant,

Present Participle.

Moulu, m. e, f.

Past Participle.

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
 See page 165.

† When the verb has only one syllable in the present indicative Singular, it is better to use that interrogative phrase *est ce que ?*

MOU

NAI

Pres. Ind. Je mouds, tu mouds, il moud, nous moul-ons, vous moul-ez, ils moulent. *Imp.* moul-ais.* *Perf.* moul-us, us, ut, ûmes, ûtes, urent. *Fut.* moudr-ai.* *Cond.* moudr-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* moul-e.* *Imp.* moulus-se.* *Imperative,* mouds, moulons, moulez.

MOURIR, to die.

No. 67.

Present Infinitive.

Mourant,

Present Participle.

Mort, m. e, f.

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je meurs, tu meurs, il meurt, nous mourons, vous meurez, ils meurent. *Imp.* mour-ais.* *Perf.* mour-us, us, ut, ûmes, ûtes, urent. *Fut.* mourr-ai.* *Cond.* mourr-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* meur-e, es, e, mourions, mouriez, meurent. *Imp.* mourus-se.* *Imperative,* meurs, meurons, mourez.

MOUVOIR, to move.

No. 68.

Present Infinitive.

Mouvant,

Present Participle.

Mu,

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je meus, tu meus, il meut, nous mouvons, vous mouvez, ils meuvent. *Imp.* mouv-ais.* *Perf.* mu-s.* *Fut.* mouvr-ai.* *Cond.* mouvr-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* meuve, es, e, mouvions, mouviez, meuvent. *Imp.* mus-se. *Imperative,* meus, mouvons, mouvez.

NAITRE, to be born,

No. 69.

Present Infinitive.

Naissant,

Present Participle.

Né, m. e, f.

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je nais, tu nais, il naît, nous naissons, vous naissez, ils naissent. *Compound Present*, Je suis né, tu es né, il est né. *Imp.* naiss-ais.* *Perf.* naquis, naquis, naquit, naquîmes, naquîtes, naquirent. *Fut.* naîtrai.* *Cond.* naîtr-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* naiss-e.* *Imp.* naquis-se.* *Imperative.* nais, naissons, naissez.

* The other persons are regular according to the table.—
See page 165.

	NU	OF	OI	OU
NUIRE , to hurt,		No. 70.		Present Infinitive.
<i>Nuisant</i> ,				Present Participle.
<i>Nui</i> ,				Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je nuis, tu nuis, il nuit, nous nuisons, vous nuisez, ils nuisent. *Imp.* nuis-ais.† *Perf.* nuis-is.† *Fut.* nuir-ai.† *Cond.* nuir-ais.† *Pres. Sub.* nuis-e.† *Imp.* nuisis-se.† *Imperative*, nuis, nuisons, nuisez.

Obtenir, to obtain, is conjugated like *tenir*.

OFFRIR ,§ to offer,	No. 71.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Offrant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Offert</i> , m. e, f.		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. J'offre, tu offres, il offre, nous offrons, vous offrez, ils offrent. *Imp.* offr-ais† *Perf.* offri-s.† *Fut.* offrir-ai.† *Cond.* offrir-ais.† *Pres. Sub.* offr-e.† *Imperfect.* offris-se.† *Imperative.* offre, offrons, offrez.

OINDRE , to anoint,	No. 72.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Oignant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Oint</i> , m. e, f.		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. J'oin-s, tu oin-s, il oin-t, nous oign-ons, vous oign-ez, ils oign-ent. *Imp.* oign-ais.† *Perf.* oign-is.† *Fut.* oindr-ai.† *Cond.* oindr-ais.† *Pres. Sub.* oign-e.† *Imp.* oignis-se.† *Imperative.* oins, oignons, oignez.

Omettre, to omit, is conjugated like *mettre*.

Ouir,¶ to hear; past participle, *oui*; perfect, *ouïs*; only used in those tenses. *J'ai ouï dire*, I have heard say.

OUVRIR ,** to open,	No. 73.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Ouvrant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Ouvert</i> , m. e. f.		Past Participle.

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

§ *Offrir* is conjugated like *couvrir*.

|| *Oindre* is conjugated like *craindre*.

¶ L'ACADÉMIE, WAILLY, RESTAULT, FÉRAUD, TRÉVAUX, BESCHERELLE.

** Is conjugated like *couvrir*.

PAI

PAR

Pres. Ind. J' ouvre, tu ouvr-es, il-ouvre, nous ouvrons, vous ouvrez, ils ouvrent. *Imp.* ouvr-ais.† *Perf.* ouvri-s.† *Fut.* ouvrir-ai.† *Cond.* ouvrir-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* ouvr-e.† *Imp.* ouvris-se. *Imperative*, ouvre, ouvrons, ouvrez.

PAITRE,† to feed.

No. 74.

Present Infinitive.

Paissant,

Present Participle.

Pu,

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je pais, tu pais, il paît, nous paissions, vous paisez, ils paissent. *Imp.* paiss-ais.† *No perfect.* *Fut.* paîtra-ai.† *Cond.* paîtra-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* paiss-e.† *No imperfect.* *Imperative*, pais, paissions, paisez.

PARAITRE, to appear,

No. 75.

Present Infinitive.

Paraissant,

Present Participle.

Paru,

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je parais, tu parais, il paraît, nous paraissions, vous paraissez, ils paraissent. *Imp.* paraiss-ais.† *Perf.* par-us, us, ut, ûmes, ûtes, urent. *Fut.* paraîtra-ai.† *Cond.* paraîtra-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* paraiss-e.† *Imp.* parus-se.† *Imperative*, parais, paraissions, paraissez.

Parcourir, to travel over, is conjugated like *courir*.

Parfaire, to perfect; past participle—*parfait*; used only in these two tenses.

PARTIR, to set off.

No. 76.

Present Infinitive.

Partant,

Present Participle.

Parti, m. e, f.

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je pars, tu pars, il part, nous partons, vous partez, ils partent. *Imp.* part-ais.† *Perf.* parti-s.† *Fut.* partir-ai. *Cond.* partir-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* part-e.† *Imp.* partis-se.† *Imperative*, pars, partons, partez.

Parvenir, to become, is conjugated like *venir*.

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

‡ Scarcely used but in the third person singular.

PEI	PER	PLA
PEINDRE ,* to paint.	No. 77.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Peignant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Peint</i> ,		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je peins, tu peins, il peint, nous peignons, vous peignez, ils peignent. *Imp.* peign-ais.† *Perf.* peign-is.† *Fut.* peindr-ai.† *Cond.* peindr-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* peign-e.† *Imp.* peignis-se.† *Imperative.* peins, peignons, peignez.

PERCEVOIR ,‡ to collect.	No. 78.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Percevant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Perçu</i> ,		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je perçois, tu perçois, il perçoit, nous percevons, vous percevez, ils perçoivent. *Imperf.* percev-ais.† *Perf.* perçu-s.† *Fut.* percevr-ai.† *Cond.* percevr-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* perçoiv-e, es, e, percevions, perceviez, perçoivent. *Imp.* perçus-se. *Imperative.* perçois, percevons, percevez.

Permettre, to permit, is conjugated like *mettre*.

Peser, is conjugated like *amener*.

PLAINDRE ,§ to pity.	No. 79.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Plaignant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Plaint</i> ,		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je plains, tu plains, il plaint, nous plaignons, vous plaignez, ils plaignent. *Imp.* plaign-ais.† *Perf.* plaign-is.† *Future.* plaindr-ai.† *Cond.* plaindr-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* plaign-e.† *Imp.* plaignis-se.† *Imperative.* plains, plaignons, plaignez.

PLAIRE , to please.	No. 80.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Plaisant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Plu</i> ,		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je plais, tu plais, il plaît, nous plaisons, vous

* *Peindre* is conjugated like *craindre*.

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

‡ *Percevoir* is conjugated like *apercevoir*.

§ *Plaindre*, is conjugated like *craindre*.

PLE	POU	PRE
plaisez, ils plaisent.	<i>Imp.</i> plais-ais.*	<i>Perf.</i> plus, us, ut, ûmes, ûtes, plurent.
	<i>Fut.</i> plair-ai.*	<i>Cond.</i> plair-ais.*
	<i>Pres.</i>	
<i>Sub.</i> plais-e.*	<i>Imp.</i> plus-se.*	<i>Imperative.</i> plais, plaisons, plaisez.

PLEUVOIR, to rain. No. 81. Present Infinitive.
No Present Participle.

Plu, Past Participle.
Impersonal Verb. *Pres. Ind.* il pleut. *Imp.* il pleuvait.†
Perf. il plut. *Fut.* il pleuvra. *Cond.* il pleuvrait. *Pres.*
Subj. qu'il pleuve. *Imp.* qu'il plût. *No Imperative.*

Poindre, to peep, to dawn; future *poindrai*, used only in these two tenses.

Poursuivre, to pursue, is conjugated like *sivre*.

Pourvoir, to provide, is conjugated like *voir*, (except the Future makes *pourvoirai*, and *Cond.* *pourvoirais*.)

POUVOIR, to be able, No. 82. Present Infinitive.
Pouvant, Present Participle.
Pu, Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je puis,† or je peux, tu peux, il peut, nous pouvons, vous pouvez, ils peuvent. *Imp.* pouv-ais.* *Perf.* pus.* *Fut.* pourr-ai.* *Cond.* pourr-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* pu-iss-e.* *Imp.* pus-se.* *No Imperative.* *Interrogatively.* Est-ce je puis? *can I?*

Prédire to foretell, is conjugated like *dire*; but the second person plural, present indicative, makes *prédisez*.

Prélire, to read over previously, is conjugated like *lire*.

PRENDRE, to take. No. 83. Present Infinitive.
Prenant, Present Participle.
Pris, m. *prise*, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je prends, tu prends, il prend, nous prenons,

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

† Figuratively, it is used in the plural; as, *Les traits pleuvaient de tous côtés*, The arrows were flying on every side.

‡ *Puis* is only used in the first person singular.

PRI

PRO

vous prenez, ils prennent. *Imp.* pren-ais.* *Perf.* pris, pris, prit, primes, prîtes, prirent. *Fut.* prendr-ai.* *Cond.* prendr-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* que je prenne, que tu prennes, qu'il prenne, que nous prenions, que vous preniez, qu'ils prennent. *Imp. pris-se.* Imperative.* prends, prenons, prenez.

Prescrire, to prescribe, is conjugated like *écrire*.

Pressentir, to foresee, is conjugated like *sentir*.

Prévaloir, to prevail, is conjugated like *valoir*; except the subjunctive present makes *prévalle*.

Prévenir, to prevent, is conjugated like *venir*.

Prévoir, is conjugated like *voir*; except the Future, which makes *prévoirai*, and Conditional *prévoirais*.

PRIER, to pray.

No. 84.

Present Infinitive.

Priant,

Present Participle.

Prié, m. *prîée*, f.

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je prie, tu pries, il prie, nous prions, vous priez, ils prient. *Imp.* je pri-ais, ais, ait, nous pri-ions, vous priez, ils pri-aient. *Perf.* je pri-ai. *Fut.* je prier-ai. *Cond.* je prier-ais. *Pres. Subj.* que je prie, que tu pries, qu'il prie, que nous prions, que vous priez, qu'ils prient. *Imp.* que je prias-se. *Imperative.* prie, prions, priez.

PRODUIRE,† to produce. No. 85.

Present Infinitive.

Produisant,

Present Participle.

Produit, m. *e. f.*

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind.—Je produis, tu produis, il produit, nous produisons, vous produisez, ils produisent. *Imp.* produis-ais. *Perf.* produis-is.* *Fut.* produir-ai.* *Cond.* produire-ais.* *Pres. Sub.* produis-e.* *Imp.* produisis-se.* *Imperative.* produis, produisons, produisez.

Promettre, to promise, is conjugated like *mettre*.

Promouvoir, to promote, past participle, *promu*, used only in these two tenses.

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—See page 165.

† *Produire*, is conjugated like *conduire*.

PRO

REC

Prescrire, to describe, is conjugated like *écrire*.

PROVENIR, to proceed from. No. 86. Present Infinitive.
Provenant, Present Participle.
Provenu, Past Participle.

Impersonal Verb.—*Pres. Ind.* il provient. *Imp.* il provenait. *Perf.* il provint. *Fut.* il proviendra. *Cond.* il proviendrait. *Pres. Subj.* qu'il provienne. *Imp.* qu'il provint.

Quérir, to fetch, used only in the infinitive present, with the verbs *aller*, *venir*, and *envoyer*.

Rabattre, to abate, is conjugated like *battre*.

Rapprendre, to learn again, is conjugated like *prendre*.

Rasseoir, to sit again, is conjugated like *asseoir*.

Repaitre, to feed, is conjugated like *paitre*.

Ratteindre, to overtake, is conjugated like *craindre*.

Ravoir and *se Ravoir*, to possess again, used only in the infinitive present.

Rebattre, to beat, is conjugated like *battre*.

Reboire, to drink again, is conjugated like *boire*.

Rebouillir, to boil again, is conjugated like *bouillir*.

RECEVOIR,* to receive. No. 87. Present Infinitive.
Recevant, Present Participle.
Reçu, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je reçois, tu reçois, il reçoit, nous recevons, vous recevez, ils reçoivent. *Imp.* recev-ais. *Perf.* reçu-s.†
Fut. recevrai.† *Cond.* recevrais.† *Pres. Subj.* reçoive, reçoives, reçoive, recevions, receviez, reçoivent. *Imp.* reçusse.† *Imperative.* reçois, recevons, recevez.

Réchoir, to fall again, is conjugated like *échoir*.

Reclure, to shut up, past participle *reclus*, used only in these two tenses.

Reconnaître, to know again, is conjugated like *connaître*.

Réconduire, to reconduct, is conjugated like *conduire*.

Reconquérir, to reconquer, is conjugated like *acquérir*.

Reconstruire, to build again, is conjugated like *conduire*.

Recoudre, to sew again, is conjugated like *coudre*.

* *Recevoir* is conjugated like *apercevoir*.

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
 See page 165.

RED

REN

Recourir, to run again, is conjugated like *courir*.
Recouvrir, to cover again, is conjugated like *couvrir*.
Récrire, to write again, is conjugated like *écrire*.
Recrottre, to grow again, is conjugated like *crottre*.
Recueillir, to gather, is conjugated like *cueillir*.
Recuire, to roast or boil again, is conjugated like *cuire*.
Redéfaire, to undo again, is conjugated like *faire*.
Redevenir, to become again, is conjugated like *venir*.
Redevoir, to owe still, is conjugated like *apercevoir*.
Redire, to say over again, is conjugated like *dire*.
Redormir, to sleep again, is conjugated like *dormir*.

REDUIRE,* to reduce. No. 88. Present Infinitive.
Réduisant, Present Participle.
Réduit, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je réduis, tu réduis, il réduit, nous réduisons, vous réduisez, ils réduisent. *Imp.* réduis-ais.† *Perf.* réduis, is.† *Fut.* réduire-ai.† *Cond.* réduir-ais.† *Pres. Sub.* réduis-e.† *Imp.* réduisis-se.† *Imperative.* réduis, réduisons, réduisez.

Refaire, to do again, is conjugated like *faire*.
Refrir, to fry again, is conjugated like *frir*.
Rejoindre, to put together again, is conjugated like *craindre*.
Relire, to read over again, is conjugated like *lire*.
Reluire, to shine, is conjugated like *luire*.
Remettre, to put or set again, is conjugated like *mettre*.
Remoudre, to grind again, is conjugated like *moudre*.
Renatre, to spring up again, is conjugated like *naitre*.

RENDUIRE,‡ to replaster. No. 89. Present Infinitive.
Renduisant, Present Participle.
Renduit, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je renduis, tu renduis, il renduit, nous renduissons, vous rendûis-ez, ils renduisent. *Imp.* renduis-ais.† *Perf.* renduis-is.† *Fut.* rendre-ai.† *Cond.* rendre-ais.† *Pres.*

* *Réduire*, is conjugated like *conduire*.

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
 See page 165.

‡ *Renduire*, is conjugated like *conduire*.

REP REQ RES

Sub. renduis-e. Imp. renduisis-se.* Imperative. renduis, renduison, renduisez.*

Rentreire, to finedraw, is conjugated like *traire*.
Renvoyer, to send back, is conjugated like *envoyer*.
Repattre, to feed, is conjugated like *pattre*.
Reparattre, to appear again, is conjugated like *parattre*.
Repartir, to set off again, is conjugated like *partir*.
Repeindre, to paint again, is conjugated like *peindre*.

se REPENTIR, † to repent. No. 90. Present Infinitive.
Repentant, Present Participle.
Repenti, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je me repens, tu te repens, il se repent, nous repen-
 tons, vous vous repentez, ils se repentent. *Imp.*
 repent-ais.* *Perf.* repenti-s.* *Fut.* repentir-ai.* *Cond.* re-
 pentir-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* repent-e.* *Imp. repentis-se.* Im-*
perative. repens-toi, repen-tons-nous, repen-tez-vous.

Reprendre, to take again, is conjugated like *prendre*.
Reproduire, to produce again, is conjugated like *conduire*.

REQUERIR, to require. No. 91. Present Infinitive.
Requérant, Present Participle.
Requis, m. *requis*, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je requiers, tu requiers, il requiert, nous re-
 quér-ons, vous requér-ez, ils requièr-ent. *Imp.* requér-ais.*
Perf. requ-is.* *Fut.* requerr-ai.* *Cond.* requerr-ais.* *Pres.*
Sub. requièr-e, es, e, requér-ions, iez, requièr-ent.* *Imp.* re-
 quis-se.* *Imperative.* requiers, requérons, requérez.

Ressentir, to feel, is conjugated like *sentir*.
Ressortir, to go out again, is conjugated like *sortir*.
Ressouvenir, to remember, is conjugated like *venir*.

RESOUDRE, ‡ to resolve. No. 92. Present Infinitive.
Résolvant, Present Participle.
Résolu, m. e, f. Past Participle.

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
 See page 165.

† *Repentir* is conjugated like *mentir*.

‡ *Resoudre* is conjugated like *absoudre*.

RIR

ROM

SAI

Pres. Ind. Je résous, tu résous, il résout, nous résolvons, vous résolvez, ils résolvent. *Imp.* résolv-ais.* *Perf.* résolus, us, ut, ûmes, ûtes, urent. *Fut.* résoudre-ai.* *Cond.* résoudre-ais.* *Pres. Sub.* résolv-e.* *Imp.* résolu-se.* *Imperative,* résous, résolvons, résolvez.

Restreindre, to bind, to restrain, is conjugated like *craindre*.

Retenir, to retain, is conjugated like *tenir*.

Retraire, to receive, is conjugated like *traire*.

Revenir, to come back again, is conjugated like *venir*.

Revêtir, to clothe again, is conjugated like *vêtir*.

Revivre, to come to life again, is conjugated like *vivre*.

Revoir, to see again, is conjugated like *voir*.

RIRE, to laugh.

No. 93.

Present Infinitive.

Riant,

Present Participle.

Ri,

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je ris, tu ris, il rit, nous rions, vous riez, ils rient. *Imp.* ri-ais.* *Perf.* ris, ris, rit, rimes, rites, rient. *Fut.* rir-ai.* *Cond.* rir-ais.* *Pres. Sub.* ri-e.* *Imp.* ris-se.* *Imperative.* ris, rions, riez.

ROMPRE, to break.

No. 94.

Present Infinitive.

Rompant,

Present Participle.

Rompu, m. e, f.

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je romps, tu romps, il rompt, nous rompons, vous rompez, ils rompent. *Imp.* romp-ais.* *Perf.* romp-is.* *Fut.* rompr-ai.* *Cond.* rompr-ais. *Pres. Sub.* romp-e.* *Imp.* rompis-se.* *Imperative.* romps, rompons, rompez.

Rouvrir, to open again, is conjugated like *ouvrir*.

SAILLIR, to project.

No. 95.

Present Infinitive.

Saillant,

Present Participle.

Sailli,

Past Participle.

Defective Verb. *Pres. Ind.* il saille. *Imp.* il saillait. *Perf.*

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

SAV

SEN

SEO

il saillit. *Fut.* il saillira, ils sailliront. *Cond.* il saillirait, ils sailliraient. *Sub. Pres.* qu'il saille. No Imperative.

Satisfaire, to satisfy, is conjugated like *faire*.

SAVOIR,* to know. No. 96. Present Infinitive.

Sachant, Present Participle.

Su, Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je sais, tu sais, il sait, nous savons, vous savez, ils savent. *Imp.* sav-ais. *Perf.* su-s. *Fut.* saur-ai.† *Cond.* saur-ais.† *Pres. Sub.* sach-e.† *Imp.* sus-se.† *Imperative.* sache, sachons, sachez.

Secourir, to succour, is conjugated like *courir*.

Séduire, to seduce, is conjugated like *conduire*.

S'en aller, to go away. See page 169.

Semer, is conjugated like *amener*.

SENTIR,‡ to feel. No. 97. Present Infinitive.

Sentant, Present Participle.

Senti, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je sens, tu sens, il sent, nous sentons, vous sentez, ils sentent. *Imp.* sent-ais.† *Perf.* sent-is.† *Fut.* sentir-ai.† *Cond.* sentir-ais.† *Pres. Sub.* sent-e.† *Imp.* sentis-se.† *Imperative*, sens, sentons, sentez.

SEOIR, to fit well. No. 98. Present Infinitive.

Séyant, Present Participle.

No Past Participle.

Defective Verb. *Pres. Ind.* il sied, ils sièent. *Imp.* il séyait, ils séyaient. *No perfect.* *Fut.* il, siéra, ils siéront. *Cond.* il siérait, ils siéraient. *Pres. Subj.* qu'il siée, qu'ils sièent. *No imperfect.* *No imperative.*

SERVIR, to serve. No. 99. Present Infinitive.

Servant, Present Participle.

Servi, m. e, f. Past Participle.

* *Savoir*, to know, means mental knowledge; *connaître*, to know, means to be acquainted by sight.

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.

‡ *Sentir* is conjugated like *mentir*.

SOR SOU SUF

Pres. Ind. Je sers, tu sers, il sert, nous servons, vous servez, ils servent. *Imp.* serv-ais.* *Perf.* servi-s.* *Fut.* servir-ai.* *Cond.* servir-ais.* *Pres. Sub.* serv-e. *Imp.* servis-se.* *Imperative.* sers, servons, servez.

SORTIR, to go out. No. 100. Present Infinitive.
Sortant, Present Participle.
Sorti, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je sors, tu sors, il sort, nous sortons, vous sortez, ils sortent. *Imp.* sort-ais.* *Perf.* sorti-s.* *Fut.* sortir-ai.* *Cond.* sortir-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* sort-e.* *Imp.* sortis-se.* *Imperative.* sors, sortons, sortez.

SOUFFRIR,† to suffer. No. 101. Present Infinitive.
Souffrant, Present Participle.
Souffert, m. e, f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je souffre, tu souffres, il souffre, nous souffrons, vous souffrez, ils souffrent. *Imp.* souffr-ais.* *Perf.* souffr-is.* *Fut.* souffrir-ai.* *Cond.* souffrir-ais.* *Pres. Subj.* souffr-e. *Imp.* souffris-se.* *Imperative.* souffre, souffrons, souffrez.

Soumettre, to subdue, is conjugated like *mettre*.

Sourdre, to spring; Indicative Present, *il sourd*, *ils sourdent*, used only in these two tenses.

Sourire, to smile, is conjugated like *rire*.

Souscrire, to subscribe, is conjugated like *écrire*.

Soustraire, to subtract, is conjugated like *traire*.

Soutenir, to support, is conjugated like *tenir*.

se Souvenir, to remember, is conjugated like *venir*.

Subvenir, to assist, is conjugated like *venir*.

SUFFIRE, to suffice. No. 102. Present Infinitive.
Suffisant, Present Participle.
Suffi, Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je suffis, tu suffis, il suffit, nous suffisons, vous

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

† *Souffrir* is conjugated like *couvrir*.

* The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

TEI	TEN	TRA
TEINDRE ,† to dye.	No. 106.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Teignant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Teint</i> , m. e, f.		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je teins, tu teins, il teint, nous teignons, vous teignez, ils teignent. *Imp.* teign-ais. *Perf.* teignis.† *Fut.* teindr-ai.† *Cond.* teindr-ais.† *Pres. Sub.* teign-e.† *Imp.* teignis-se.† *Imperative*, teins, teignons, teignez.

TENIR , to hold.	No. 107.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Tenant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Tenu</i> , m. e, f.		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je tiens, tu tiens, il tient, nous ten-ons, vous tenez, ils tiennent. *Imp.* ten-ais.† *Perf.* tins, tins, tint, tîmes, tîntes, tinrent. *Fut.* tiendr-ai.† *Cond.* tiendr-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* tienn-e, es, e, tenions, teniez, tiennent. *Imp.* tins-se.† *Imperative*, tiens, tenons, tenez.

Tistre, to weave, past participle *tissu*, used only in the past participle, with *avoir*.§

TRADUIRE , to translate. -	No. 108.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Traduisant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Traduit</i> , m. e, f.		Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je traduis, tu traduis, il traduit, nous traduis-ons, vous traduisez, ils traduisent. *Imp.* traduis-ais.† *Perf.* traduis-is.† *Fut.* traduir-ai.† *Cond.* traduir-ais.† *Pres. Sub.* traduis-e.† *Imp.* traduisis-se.† *Imperative*, traduis, traduisez.

TRAIRE , to milk.	No. 109.	Present Infinitive.
<i>Trayant</i> ,		Present Participle.
<i>Trait</i> ,		Past Participle.

† *Teindre* is conjugated like *craindre*.

‡ The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

§ However *Voltaire* has employed this verb in the perfect :
1st, L'Inde a grand frais *tissut* ses vêtements ; 2nd, Une femme
hardie *tissut* le fil de cette perfidie.

|| *Traduire* is conjugated like *conduire*.

TRE VAN VAL

Pres. Ind. Je trais, tu trais, il trait, nous trayons, vous trayez, ils traient. *Imp.* tray-ais.† *No perfect.* *Fut.* trair-ai.† *Cond.* trair-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* trai-e, es, e, trayions, trayiez, qu'ils traient. *No imperfect.* *No imperative.*

Transcrire, to transcribe, is conjugated like *écrire*.

Transmettre, to transmit, is conjugated like *mettre*.

TRESSAILLIR, § to start. No. 110. Present Infinitive.

Tressaillant, Present Participle.

Tressailli, Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je tressaille, tu tressailles, il tressaille, nous tressaillons, vous tressaillez, ils tressaillent. *Imp.* tressaill-ais.† *Perf.* tressailli-s.† *Fut.* tressaillir-ai. *Cond.* tressaillir-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* tressaill-e.† *Imp.* tressaillis-se.† *Imperative*, tressaille, tressaillons, tressaillez.

VAINCRE, to conquer. No. 111. Present Infinitive.

Vainquant, Present Participle.

Vaincu, m. e. f. Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je vains, tu vains, il vaine, nous vainquons, vous vainquez, ils vainquent. *Imp.* vainqu-ais.† *Perf.* vainqu-is.† *Fut.* vaincr-ai.† *Cond.* vaincr-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* vainqu-e.† *Imp.* vainquis-se.† *Imperative*, vains, vainquons, vainquez.

Interrogatively. Est-ce que je vains? Do I conquer?

VALOIR, to be worth. No. 112. Present Infinitive.

Valant, Present Participle.

Valu, Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je vau, tu vau, il vaut, nous valons, vous valez, ils valent. *Imp.* val-ais.† *Perf.* valu-s.† *Fut.* vaudr-ai

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

§ This verb has two futures and conditionals. FRENCH ACADEMY writes—*Tressaillirai*, *Tressaillirais*. DOMERGNE, BESCHERELLE, and other grammarians, write—*Tressaillera*, *Tressaillerais*.

Pres. Ind. Je vois, tu vois, il voit, nous voyons, vous voyez,

T

VOU

ils voient. *Imp.* voy-ais.† *Perf.* vis, vis, vit, vimes, vites, virent. *Fut.* verr-ai.† *Cond.* verr-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* voie, voies, voie, voyions, voyiez, voient.† *Imp.* vis-se.† *Imperative*, vois, voyons, voyez.

VOULOIR, to wish.

No. 117.

Present Infinitive.

Voulant,

Present Participle.

Voulu,

Past Participle.

Pres. Ind. Je veux, tu veux, il veut, nous voulons, vous voulez, ils veulent. *Imp.* voul-ais† *Perf.* voulu-s.† *Fut.* voudr-ai.† *Cond.* voudr-ais.† *Pres. Subj.* veuill-e, es, e, voulions, vouliez, veuillent. *Imp.* voulus-se.† *Imperative*, veuille, veuillons, veuillez, and voulons, voulez. The verb **VOULOIR** has two imperatives; *veuille, veuillons, veuillez*, expressions of politeness; as, *Veuillez recevoir mes respects*, Be so kind as to receive my respects. *Voulons, voulez*, expressions of command: *Voulons, et nous pourrons*, Let us wish, and we shall be able. L'Abbé de LA MENNAIS has said: *Faites un effort, voulez seulement; Celui qui donne le bon vouloir vous donnera aussi la force, de l'accomplir*, Make an effort, only wish; He who gives the good wish will give you also the strength to accomplish it.

† The other persons are regular, according to the table.—
See page 165.

OF THE PUNCTUATION AND ORTHOGRAPHICAL SIGNS.

PUNCTUATION is the art of pointing out, in printing and writing, by proper signs, the pauses that should be made in reading. It serves to distinguish the periods and members of a written speech, and to render it more intelligible.

There are nine signs made use of in punctuation : The Comma (,). The Semicolon (;). The Colon (:). The Full-Stop (.). The Note of Interrogation (?). The Note of Admiration (!). The Inverted Comma (“); and the Hyphen (-).

The Comma indicates the shortest pause, an almost imperceptible pause; it is placed after the substantives, adjectives, verbs, and adverbs which follow, and which are qualified by each other. The Comma usually separates those parts of a sentence, which, though very closely connected in sense and construction, require a pause between them.

Quand ce mémoire fut écrit, il fallut le faire traduire en turc et l'écrire d'une écriture particulière, sur un papier fait exprès, dont on doit se servir pour tout ce qu' on présente au Sultan.

We place between two commas every accidental proposition, which could be omitted without injuring the sense of the principal proposition :

Mon frère, j'aime à le croire, viendra ce soir.

L'imagination, dit Montaigne, est comme une folle dans la maison.

The Semicolon marks a longer pause than the comma. It is used when the sense is not quite com-

pleted, and that it will only be concluded by what shall follow.

Le courage est une vertu ; mais il ne doit pas dégénérer en témérité.

The Colon indicates a pause longer than the semi-colon. It is usually placed at the end of one of the members of a period, the sense of which is completed, but which is followed by something.

Il ne faut pas craindre les méchants : car ils ne peuvent tuer que le corps.

The Full-Stop marks the most complete pause ; it is placed at the end of a period, when the sense is entirely finished.

The Note of Interrogation is that stop which is placed after asking questions, or making requests.

Que demandez vous ? Qui cherchez vous ?

The Note of Admiration or Exclamation, is placed at the end of phrases which indicate astonishment or exclamation.

Quel bonheur ! Quelle félicité !

The Inverted Comma is a kind of character represented thus ("); it is placed before the first, and after the last word of a quotation.

Fabert n'étant pas disposé à souffrir l'amputation, ses amis lui représentèrent qu'il valait mieux perdre un membre que la vie. "Messieurs," leur dit Fabert, "je vous rends grace "de vos conseils ; mais vous me permettrez de n'en pas profiter. Je ne veux pas mourir par pièces, la mort m'aura "tout entier, ou n'aura rien."

The Hyphen is placed between words the union of which forms a compound substantive.

Un avant-coureur. Un cure-dent.

ABBREVIATIONS

SOMETIMES USED IN WRITING AND PRINTING.

- S. M. *Sa Majesté* his or her Majesty.
L. M. *Leurs Majestés*, their Majesties.
V. M. *Votre Majesté*, your Majesty.
S. M. Imp. *Sa Majesté Impériale*, his or her Imperial Majesty.
L. M. Imp. *Leurs Majestés Impériales*, their Imperial Majesties.
S. M. T. C. *Sa Majesté très-Chrétienne*, his most Christian Majesty.
S. M. Cath. *Sa Majesté Catholique*, his Catholic Majesty.
S. M. Brit. *Sa Majesté Britannique*, his or her Britannic Majesty.
S. M. Pruss. *Sa Majesté Prussienne*, his Prussian Majesty.
S. M. Polon. *Sa Majesté Polonaise*, his Polish Majesty.
S. A. R. *Son Altesse Royale*, his or her Royal Highness.
S. A. E. *Son Altesse Electorale*, his Electoral Highness.
S. A. S. *Son Altesse Sérénissime*, His most Serene Highness.

L. N. & H. P. *Leurs Nobles & Hautes Puissances*, their High Mightinesses.

S. E. *Son Excellence*, his or her Excellence.

S. S. *Sa Sainteté* his Holiness.

S. Emin. *Son Eminence*, his Eminence.

V. S. *Vieux Style*, Old Style.

N. S. *Nouveau Style*, New Style.

J. C. *Jésus-Christ*, Jesus Christ.

N. D. *Notre-Dame*, Our Lady.

C. P. *Constantinople*.

C. A. D. *C'est à dire*, that is to say.

Mr. *Monsieur*, Sir or Master.

M^{de}. or M^e. *Madame*, Madam or Mistress.

M^{lle}. *Mademoiselle*, Miss.

Mess.or MM. *Messieurs*, Gentlemen, Masters, Messieurs.

MS. *Manuscript*, Manuscript.

Sept. or 7^{bre}. *Septembre*, September.

Oct. 8^{bre}. *Octobre*, October.

Nov. 9^{bre}. *Novembre*, November.

Déc. x^{bre}. *Décembre*, December.

S. V. P. *S'il vous platt*, if you please.

T. S. V. P. *Tournez s'il vous platt*, turn if you please.

THE END.

POPULAR AND ESTABLISHED

School and College Books,

Sold by J. Robertson,
3, GRAFTON STREET, DUBLIN.

- DU GUÉ'S FRENCH PRONOUNCING DICTIONARY, French and English, English and French, 5s.
- FRENCH GRAMMAR. A great advantage of this Grammar is, that every rule has all its exceptions annexed to it. Fourth edition, enlarged and improved, 3s. 6d.
- FRENCH EXERCISES ON OLLENDORFF'S PLAN. Fourth Edition, 2s.
- FRENCH PHRASE BOOK; OR MANUAL OF FRENCH CONVERSATION. Fifth edition, 1s.
- KEY TO THE PRONUNCIATION OF EVERY WORD IN THE FRENCH LANGUAGE. Fourth edition, 1s.
- FRENCH GENDERS DETERMINED BY THE SOUND OF THE LAST SYLLABLE—a plan which was never introduced before. Second edition, 10d.
- FRENCH AND ENGLISH PRIMER. Third edition. 1s.
- AINSWORTH'S LATIN AND ENGLISH DICTIONARY, by MORELL AND DUNCAN, 8vo. cloth, 9s.
- BLAIR'S SCHOOL DICTIONARY, 12mo. sheep, 3s.
- CATECHISMS, three parts, 18mo. sewed, each 9d.
- BOSSUT'S FRENCH AND ENGLISH PRIMER, sewed, 9d.
- BOYER & DELATANVILLE'S DICTIONARY, French and English, 12s.
- BURNET'S EXPOSITION OF THE THIRTY-NINE ARTICLES, with NOTES, &c. by PAGE, 8vo. cloth, 9s.
- BUTTER'S ETYMOLOGICAL SPELLING BOOK, 12mo. bound, 1s. 6d.
- CICERO DE OFFICIIS, WITH ENGLISH NOTES, BY DR. W. C. TAYLOR, 12mo. cloth, 4s. 6d.
- COMSTOCK'S NATURAL PHILOSOPHY, revised by LEES, 4s. 6d.
- CORNER'S HISTORICAL LIBRARY, 12mo. cloth :—
- | | | | | | |
|--|---|------------------|--|---|------------------|
| England and Wales,
Germany,
Poland and Russia,
Turkey and the Ottoman
Empire,
Italy and Switzerland,
Rome, | } | 3s. 6d.
each. | Holland and Belgium,
Ireland,
Scotland,
France,
Spain and Portugal,
Denmark, Norway, and
Sweden, | } | 2s. 6d.
each. |
|--|---|------------------|--|---|------------------|
- DAVIDSON'S TRANSLATION OF VIRGIL, new edition, 3s. 6d.
- DES CARRIERE'S HISTOIRE DE FRANCE, 12mo. bound, 7s.
- FRENCH PHRASES, square, bound, 3s. 6d.
- DUNCAN'S GREEK TESTAMENT, 12mo. bound, 4s. 6d.

Books Sold by J. Robertson, Dublin.

- ELLIS'S LATIN EXERCISES, BY ARNOLD, 12mo. bound, 3s. 6d.
 FULTON AND KNIGHT'S DICTIONARY, square 12mo. bound, 4s. 6d.
 GAULTIER'S (ABBE) FAMILIAR GEOGRAPHY, square, coloured
 Maps, cloth, 3s.
 _____ GEOGRAPHICAL and HISTORICAL QUES-
 TIONS, square cloth, 3s.
 GROVES'S GEOGRAPHY FOR CHILDREN, 18mo. sewed, 3d.
 GISBORNE ON GENERAL EXPEDIENCY according to PALEY, 1s.
 GRADUS AD PARNASSUM, BY PYPER, 12mo. bound, 7s. 6d.
 GRAGLIA'S ITALIAN DICTIONARY, 18mo. bound, 6s.
 HINCK'S GREEK-ENGLISH AND ENGLISH-GREEK LEXICON with
 DICTIONARY OF PROPER NAMES, square 12mo. bound, 12s.
 HODGE ON THE ROMANS, (used in T.C.D.) 12mo. cloth, 4s.
 JOHNSON'S DICTIONARY, 32mo. bound, 1s.
 JOYCE'S SCIENTIFIC DIALOGUES, imperial 32mo. cloth, 2s. 6d.
 KEIGHTLEY'S HISTORY OF ENGLAND, 2 vols. 12mo. cloth, each 7s.
 _____ Elementary, 12mo. bound, 5s.
 _____ HISTORY OF GREECE, 12mo. cloth, 6s. 6d.
 _____ Elementary, 18mo. bound, 3s. 6d.
 _____ HISTORY OF ROME, 2 vols. 12mo. cloth, each, 6s. 6d.
 _____ Elementary, 18mo. bound, 3s. 6d.
 _____ MYTHOLOGY, 18mo. bound, 4s.
 _____ HORACE, WITH NOTES AND EXERCISES, 10s. 6d.
 _____ VIRGIL, WITH NOTES, EXERCISES, &c. 10s. 6d.
 LEMPRIERE'S CLASSICAL DICTIONARY, BY ANTHON and BAR-
 KER, improved and enlarged, 8vo. cloth, 15s. 6d.
 LENNIE'S ENGLISH GRAMMAR, 18mo. bound, 1s. 6d.
 MAIR'S LATIN SYNTAX, 12mo. bound, 3s.
 MAVOR'S SPELLING, 12mo. bound, 1s.
 NEWTON ON THE PROPHECIES, 8vo. cloth, 9s.
 NOEHDEN'S GERMAN GRAMMAR, 12mo. 7s. 6d.
 _____ EXERCISES, 12mo. 6s. 6d.
 NUGENT'S FRENCH DICTIONARY, BY TARVER, 18mo. roan, 5s. 6d.
 PARKHURST'S GREEK AND ENGLISH LEXICON, BY ROSE, new
 edition, by MAJOR, royal 8vo. cloth, £1. 4s.
 PINNOCK'S CATECHISMS, (Whittaker's Improved editions,) each, 9d.
 _____ GOLDSMITH'S HISTORY OF ENGLAND, 12mo. roan, 6s.
 _____ ROME, 12mo. roan, 5s. 6d.
 _____ GREECE, 12mo. roan, 5s. 6d.
 ROBINSON'S HARMONY OF THE FOUR GOSPELS, 3s.
 SOAVE'S NOVELLI MORALI, 12mo. bound, 4s.
 STEPS TO KNOWLEDGE, BY MRS. BOURNE, on the plan of "Child's
 Guide to Knowledge," 18mo. cloth, 3s.
 TELEMAQUE, BY GROSS, 12mo. bound, 4s.
 VIRGILII OPERA DELPHINI, new edition, 8vo. cloth, 10s.
 _____ HEYNII, 18mo. Oxford, cloth, 3s.



